President Soekarno & President Kim Il Sung

RACHMAWATI SOEKARNOPUTRI

BOOKNESIA

Let's go to the sea, let's go to the sea,
Let's go to the sea
Beautiful with white sails.
White birds flying on the waves.
We, let's go to the sea.
Birds are flying on hills and plains
Everywhere we go
O, our sky is beautiful.

Let's go to the mountains, let's go to the mountains
Let's go to the mountains
With clear water rolling on the rock
Birds and wind heard to our hearts.
We, let's go to mountains

- Song of **Let's Go to the Mountains and Sea**

Soekarno, Kim Il Sung
Like a high mountains
They are firm and sacred
They are firm and sacred
They're bulwarks of independence

Soekarno, Kim Il Sung
Like a brave eagle
They are flying in the vast sky
They are flying in the vast sky
They're defenders of liberation and peace

Long live Soekarno, Long Live Kim Il Sung
Carrying forward Bandung spirit
Indonesia and Korea go shoulder to shoulder
We'll be rich and strong

- Song of **Soekarno - Kim Il Sung**

On the Centenary of the Birth of President Kim Il Sung

PRESIDENT SOEKARNO
&
PRESIDENT KIM IL SUNG

BOOKNESIA

Copyright © 2012 by Rachmawati Soekarnoputri

All Rights Reserved

Published in the Jakarta, Indonesia by BOOKNESIA, an imprint of
the Rakyat Merdeka Online (RMOL) Publishing Group,
Jakarta, Indonesia.
www.rmol.co

A hardcover edition of this book was originally Published in 2012
by BOOKNESIA

BOOKNESIA and its logo, are trademarks
of Rakyat Merdeka Online (RMOL) Publishing Group.

Book design by Denni N. JA

ISBN 978-602-18329-0-5
PRINTED IN JAKARTA, INDONESIA

First Paperback Edition, 2012
Second Paperback Edition, 2015

PRESIDENT SOEKARNO
&
PRESIDENT KIM IL SUNG

RACHMAWATI SOEKARNOPUTRI

BOOKNESIA
April 2012

FORWARD

TIME HAS PASSED FAST and I am over sixty although I had years of Pramuka when I was decorated like flowers with a gorgeous veil of a daughter of the President and spent youth hood when I had to undergo trials of frustration as the situation changed rapidly. As I have reached the twilight of my life unawares when I am called Grandma, I recollect and feel many things anew although my life has been an ordinary one.

There is an endless stream of precious memories like gold dust thrown into the sky. However, what is usual is the thought of my father Soekarno who led the country for more than 20 years as the founder and as the first President of the Republic of Indonesia.

Whenever I think of my father Soekarno, I think of President Kim Il Sung of Korea who is the hero of the 20th century, the great man of the 20th century and the great sage of the 20th century.

It is quite natural.

President Kim Il Sung is a great man who glorified the palmy days of my father's life.

The prestige of my father Soekarno was heightened still further and the golden age of Indonesia-Korea friendship was brighter about thanks to my father's friendly relations with him. I experienced all this in my childhood, but it is kept in my mind as beautiful and noble memories.

I write this book warmheartedly recollecting those historic days, which are not forgotten with the passage of time, and which should not be forgotten.

Those stories are not merely stories about the close relations between the two men and about the most glorious days of friendship between Indonesia and Korea which was established by them, but also contain many historical facts ranging from the past stories about them and later stories about the friendship between the two countries.

I deem it my greatest honor to dedicate this book on the occasion of the 100th birthday of esteemed President Kim Il Sung. I also wish that this book would contribute even a little to the strengthening and development of Indonesia-Korea friendship with new vitality.

Readers, I wish your comments.

RSP
April, 2012

CONTENTS

Preface xiii

CHAPTER ONE

GREAT MEN WITH MANY THINGS IN COMMON
SOEKARNO-KIM IL SUNG, KIM IL SUNG-SOEKARNO 1
Birth of the Great Men, the Blessings of Their Parents 3
"Double Six" and Blessed "Soekarno" 3
April 15 and a "Hero Boy" 5

Retrospections of the Poverty of the Great Men and "To Believe in the People as in Heaven" 11
Monthly Income "25 Rupiah" 11
"Gruel" and "Sore Throat" 12
The Story of the Clock of which the President's Grandmother was Envious 15
The Houses of the People Should Be Taller than the Office Building of Power Organs 18
The Grand People's Study House Built high in the Central Part of Pyongyang 19
Carter Fails to See the People Although He Sees Anglers 23

Unattained Study Abroad and "People-Bound Train" 24
Bandung or Amsterdam? 24
"The 250-mile Journey for Learning" 27
Refused Offer Study in Moscow 30
Even if Three People Gather, They Should Unite 33
"There is a Way Out even if Heaven Falls" 35
The "Spirit" of the Koreans 40
The Juche Idea and "Marhaenism" 46

Incarnation of the Human Touch and Moral Obligation 52
The Two Great Men and Their Benefactors 52
Two Visits of Consolation 54

Great Patriots, Great Revolutionaries 58
"Mother-Tongue Reader" and "Bahasa Indonesia" 59
In the Jilin Prison and the Sukamiskin Prison 61
"Bima" and the Brilliant "Sun" of Korea 75

CHAPTER TWO

GANEFO
Before the Opening of the Great Festival of Friendship and Solidarity 83
In the Days of Grand Festival 95
President Kim Il Sung and the Flower of GANEFO, Sin Gum Dan 95
A gold medal to Egypt, honour to Korea 100
"Gold Art" of Chollima Korea 108
GANEFO Closed in Pyongyang 114

CHAPTER THREE

SOEKARNO TO PYONGYANG 123
Brief Review of Indonesia-Korea Relations 123
At Pyongyang Airport 127
SignificantTalk (1) 136
Significant Talk (2) 144
Title of Honorary Academician to the "Engineer" Who Built "Bridge of Friendship" 150
Amid Sea of Flowers of Welcome 154
Farewell Banquet 160
Again At the Airport 165
At the Soekarno and Zhu Enlai Talk 168

CHAPTER FOUR

PRESIDENT KIM IL SUNG IN INDONESIA 175
President Kim Il Sung Leaves for a Long Journey 182
Meeting in Cheering Jakarta 188
Friendly President, the Greatest State Guest 196
At night in Jakarta 201
"Young Commander" 204
An Auspicious Event in Bandung 208
Bogor Where Kimilsungia came into being 213
Significant meeting, significant special lecture 231
April 15 in Jakarta 245
"Song of General Kim Il Sung" 253
Meaningful Meetings during Busy Days 257
President Kim Il Sung and "Young Commander" on the Day of Departure from Jakarta 269

CHAPTER FIVE

ALONG WITH KIMILSUNGIA 277
"Friendship Girl Moran" 277
Story of What Happened Later 279
Leader Kim Jong Il and Kimilsungia 286
Kimilsungia and Soekarnos 292

CHAPTER SIX

SIGNIFICANT EVENT, SUCCEEDING FRIENDSHIP 301

PREFACE

While conceiving the contents of this book, I made one extraordinary "discovery" at which I could not repress my excitement.

It was that through this book I would be able to give a clear answer to the question raised by many people, what kind of man is Soekarno?

As everyone knows, my father Soekarno was fond of social intercourse with foreigners and had many friends in many countries of the world. My father had his own political belief.

However, without being particular about it, he was not biased to the East or West and was very proud of his friendly relations with different people. So it was natural that he had many friends.

When someone mentioned it, my father said: "I like both Asians and Westerners. I love even those who hate me. I have never born grudge against those who slander me."

Here is a good example.

My father knew that General De Gaulle of France had ill feelings towards him, but did not care about it. He had a very

impressive meeting with General De Gaulle in an open-minded atmosphere in Vienna of Austria.

Since then, the two politicians had good feelings towards each other. Nevertheless, there were not a few people who hated my father, people who slang mud at him, in the West, in particular.

At one time, journalists in the West slandered my father as a "slave of Moscow". My father answered them.

"I make it clear that I am not a communist. I have never been a communist and I cannot be such a man. You say that I fawn upon Moscow? Those who have ever been near Soekarno will know that he is too proud to become a slave of anyone with the exception of his own people."

He was the President of the Republic of Indonesia. The Republic of Indonesia of which he was proud is a great power in population next to China, India, the former Soviet Union and the United States.

The Republic of Indonesia is also a great country in territory, ranking the sixth place in the world, which is placed after Australia.

Indonesia held the first place in the production of petroleum in Southeast Asia. It was also a great power in natural resources next to the United States and the former Soviet Union in the deposits of natural resources. How can the proud President of such a country fawn upon someone else.

Some critics called my father "bad man of Asia".

They took photos of people suffering from drought and epidemics as well as from shortage of food with a splendid

Indonesia hotel for a background and published them with an explanatory note "Soekarno Indonesia."

However, it was not the true features of Soekarno Indonesia. When Soekarno proclaimed the Republic of Indonesia and became the first President of a new independent state, only 6 percent of the whole population could read and write.

People were weak and short in height. But, 20 years after Soekarno became the President, there were no illiterates among the people under 45 in the large country with more than a hundred million people; children were tall and life span of people increased. Can such a thing really be possible in a country where people suffer from hunger?

Critics spoke ill of Soekarno, and had no scruples about debasing him personally. I cannot forget even now how angry I was at US publication carrying mean photographs debasing my father. My father was not afraid of them, but would say proudly:

"In a nutshell, Soekarno is a man with great love. He loves his country and people; he loves women and art and himself, in particular. Soekarno is a man of emotion. So, when he sees beautiful scenes he breathes deeply, when he sings the Negro psalm, he bursts out crying."

Then my father said that he thought he could become a "man of emotion" thanks to the omniscient and omnipotent Lord and said he was grateful to Him.

My father also said, "Without Him how could I become the great leader of the revolution as one hundred and five million people call me. Without Him, how could I liberate my nation

from the 3 centuries and a half-long rule of the Netherlands, and could I found a unified Indonesia consisting of many islands such as Java, Bali, Sumatra, Borneo and Spice Islands."

Nevertheless my father did not praise himself as an outstanding man. He considered that man is judged after he dies. At one time my father was on private terms with Howard, the US ambassador to Indonesia.

One day he had a luncheon with him in a small villa in Bogor, a cool mountainous area in the suburbs of Jakarta. At that time Howard said to my father that it was a time to write an autobiography.

Listening to him my father said to the following effect.

"That will never do. Who knows what will become of me. If a man who writes his autobiography regards himself as a great man his autobiography will not become an objective one, but subjective one. If he writes only about good things, he will become an egoistic man who praises himself. And if one writes only about bad things, it may give people a wrong understanding."

My father continued:

"People will judge me fairly only after I die. Was Soekarno a good man or a bad man? Only then I will be judged."

Then what kind of man was my father Soekarno?

I found an answer to this question in the course of my deep study of the exceptional relations my father and of President Kim Il Sung while preparing for this book.

My father respected President Kim Il Sung of Korea, a world-wide great man born of the 20th century. Nevertheless

my father was just such a man. This is the answer I have found and the "discovery".

So to speak, if you want to know my father please know his closest friend President Kim Il Sung. If you want to see Soekarno, see President Kim Il Sung, his closest friend.

From olden times people said, "If you want to know a man, see his friend."

The image of your friend is yourself reflected on the mirror.

You will read, in this book, many new stories about the great personality of President Kim Il Sung and accordingly, you will have a new understanding of my father, who was a friend of his.

President Soekarno welcomes President Kim Il Sung in Kemayoran of Jakarta, April 1965. *Foto: Repro*

President Soekarno welcomes President Kim Il Sung in Kemayoran of Jakarta, April 1965. *Foto: Repro*

President Soekarno congratulates President Kim Il Sung for his *Doctor Honoris Causa* given by the University of Indonesia at the Presidential Palace of Jakarta, April 15, 1965. *Foto: Repro*

President Kim Il Sung walks into the Presidential Palace in Jakarta, accompanied by "the young commander" Great Leader Kim Jong Il (right), April, 1965. *Foto: Repro*

President Kim Il Sung and President Soekarno in Bogor Botanical Gaden.
Foto: Repro

I

GREAT MEN WITH MANY THINGS IN COMMON SOEKARNO-KIM IL SUNG, KIM IL SUNG-SOEKARNO

THE STORY ABOUT the relations between my father and President Kim Il Sung is a constant sacred topic in our Indonesia-Korea Association for Friendship and Cultural Exchange where I work as the chairman.

Whenever the story about them was the topic I frequently received one and the same question which I found difficult to answer.

The main point of the question was why they could establish so exceptional relations.

It is not in the least a matter of reprimand or surprise that such a question is often raised and it is not easy to answer it.

It is because when viewed in an objective way, the two men were too different from each other.

My father was a faithful believer.

However, President Kim Il Sung was an unbeliever out and out.

My father was a nationalist.

Nevertheless, President Kim Il Sung was an ardent communist.

Like this, they had completely different political views and religious faiths.

Moreover, there was a great difference in their ages and the time of close acquaintance was short.

My father was more than 10 years older than President Kim Il Sung and the time during which they got closely acquainted visiting each other as heads of state was only 2 years.

So, it is not too much for people to be curious about the exceptional relations between them.

In general, the relations between heads of states are established within the bounds of state relations and assume an official character.

Deep relations that are beyond such official relations necessitate some special opportunity or ties.

Nevertheless, there was no special momentum or ties between President Kim Il Sung and my father.

Therefore, it was impossible to easily find an answer to the question.

I found the answer during my deep study of their lives and activities for this book.

The answer is that there were many similar events, many things in common facts in their extraordinary lives.

They did not know then, but I think that these facts exerted a very great influence on their personality and characters,

the height of their intelligence and the perfection of their ideological and mental cultivation.

I also think that these facts established outstanding relations between them just as the invisible universal gravitation harmonizes all things in the universe.

I write in this book a few of such facts.

Birth of the Great Men, the Blessings of Their Parents

"Double Six" and Blessed "Soekarno"

The two great men, President Kim Il Sung and President Soekarno were both the heroes of the nation, fathers of the nation. They were born in the dark age when their fatherlands were fettered in colonial yoke and led their countries and nations to the road of independence and liberation and accomplished the cause of founding their countries amid the extraordinary expectations and blessings of their especially sagacious parents.

My father was born in Surabaya of Java at dawn of June 6, 1901 when over 350-year-long colonial rule of the Netherlands over our fatherland Indonesia was continuing.

When my father was born an old woman in the neighborhood, not a mid-wife, held him in her arms.

There was nothing special in his birth in this poor family that was unable to invite even a mid-wife.

But, his mother did not regard the birth of her son as an ordinary event. She believed that June 6 when her son was born was the luckiest birthday because they were even numbers; she also said to other people. She also said that my father was

born around 5:30 at dawn when day was breaking because he was blessed by the God and said that her son would certainly become an extraordinary man.

To tell the truth, according to the religious belief of Javanese, the destiny of those who are born at peep of dawn is already decided by the revelation of the God. Maybe it is because of such belief that some people attached special meaning to his birth.

When my father was born, the Kelud Volcano erupted.

Those people who entertain a superstitious belief regarded it to be a good omen, and said: "That welcomes the birth of a new life."As is widely known to the world, our country has many volcanoes and there have been not few calamities because of them.

The Tambora Volcano on Sumbawa Island that erupted for 17 days from April 1, 1815 took a heavy toll of 100,000 lives and caused a colossal material loss.

The Krakatoa Volcano in the middle of the Sunda Strait between Sumatra and Java erupted consecutively in May and August 1883, taking a heavy toll of more than 50,000 lives and covering the whole of the island with 30 meters thick lava and volcano ashes.

It reduced the place to a lifeless zone, to an island of death with no living activities at all.

The eruptions of volcano impose misfortunes and calamities on people, but they predicted that the eruption of the Kelud Volcano was the blessing of the birth of Soekarno.

My grandfather firmly believed that his son who was born

receiving the blessing of the heavens, the eruption of a volcano, at dawn on a lucky day, would become a hero.

So he renamed his son "Soekarno".

Originally he named his son Kusno. But, it did not conform to his desire. Believing in his son's extraordinariness, he wished to bring up his son as a great hero, a great patriot. So he renamed his son "Karno" and put the prefix "Su" in front of it.

Karno was a legendary hero who appeared in the ancient India's famous literary work "Mahabharata". So my grandfather gave the name of the legendary hero he worshipped, to his son. The prefix "Su" in front of "Karno" means the most excellent in Javanese. So, in the long run "Soekarno" meant the "excellent hero"

My father, who was born and grew up amid such blessings, left his name as the hero of the nation to posterity. It was really a wonderful event: The expectation and wishes of his parents and honest neighbors became a reality. We also find such a miraculous fact in President Kim Il Sung, the closest friend of my father Soekarno.

I introduce some impressive stories about him.

April 15 and a "Hero Boy"

There is a scenic place, which is called Mangyongdae, in the suburbs of Pyongyang, the capital of Korea. It is called Mangyongdae because here one can command a multitude of all scenes around it.

The great President Kim Il Sung was born in this historic place. Now, a main street, which has the meaningful name of

Kwangbok, stretches up to this place and the roads leading to the President's old home are paved neatly. However, a century ago, when he was born, only rough cart-roads meandered between high and low hills covered with pine trees.

Nevertheless, this place was famous for its fine scenery and from olden times they took note of it in the ancient book, "Korean Geography", and many people visited it. Noblemen and landlords of Pyongyang vied with each other in buying land here as burial plots.

Noblemen and landlords built cottages for keepers of their graves. Such cottages were called grave keepers' cottages. The cottage where the President was born was also such a grave keeper's cottage. His great grandfather was so poor that he became a grave keeper for a landlord and moved to this cottage from the Walled City of Pyongyang.

Like this, Mangyongdae is a scenic place coveted by people. So many people visited it.

One day a famous geomancer of those days came to this place and asked women at the well side for water. A Korean geomancer is a man who chooses a gravesite or a house site. The theory of geomancy which says that it is only when a good site is chosen for a grave or a house that posterity will, one's folks will live in peace and the country will prosper was the approved knowledge of the feudal state in those days. So a geomancer was a popular guest who was welcomed everywhere he went.

By the way, the geomancer who visited Mangyongdae on balmy spring day when apricots and azaleas were in full

bloom, made a famous prophecy that was widely known to the world later. After drinking the water offered by a village woman, he looked around the mountains and streams when he said;

"I have visited many places living as a geomancer all my life. However, I see a place as Mangyongdae for the first time. Here water and wind, the topography, trees and grass form a harmony so that one can enjoy all scenes at a glance. It is doubtless that a great man will be born in Mangyongdae."

At that time Korea was a colony of outrageous Japanese imperialism and the sorrow of a ruined people prevailed in the whole land of Korea. There was really tragic story about it. Korea was a country with a long history of 5,000 years. It was well known as a "land of sunrise" and an "eastern country of good manners"

Nevertheless, towards the close of the Li Dynasty the corrupt and incompetent rulers, steeped in flunkeyism towards the great powers, scrambled with each other and seeking for a partisan interest, each faction ushered in great powers.

In consequence, the state affairs were confused, the people were in extreme distress and the state power could not maintain the country.

When the pro-Japanese faction gained the upper hand, Japanese soldiers guarded the royal palace, and when the pro-Russian faction was more powerful, Russian soldiers guarded the Emperor. And when the pro-Chinese faction got the better of the others, Chinese guards stood on sentry at the royal palace.

The Sino-Japanese war and the Russo-Japanese War were the scramble of foreign forces for power, around concessions. Japan that defeated China and Russia in these wars occupied Korea.

It was in April 1912, the two years after the occupation of Korea, that the geomancer who had visited Mangyongdae foretold the appearance of a great man.

So "the land where a great man would descend" foretold by the geomancer meant that a savior of the country would appear in Mangyongdae.

On April 15, 1912, a few days after then, a loud cry telling about the birth of an extraordinary noble man reverberated through dawn darkness.

President Kim Il Sung, the national hero who assumed the historic mission of achieving the country's independence, the great leader who would attain the cause of building the country and building a powerful state of Juche in the East, the sun of mankind who would open up the broad avenue of independence with the brilliant rays of the Juche idea, was born here.

His birth was a historic event, which promised a bright future of Korea.

Those who saw it before anyone else were his father Mr. Kim Hyong Jik and his mother Mrs. Kang Pan Sok. They were not ordinary people. They were ardent patriots, staunch revolutionaries and intelligent people who foresaw the future of their son with outstanding and unusual perspicacity.

Mr. Kim Hyong Jik, the President's father, strove from

his early years for the education of the posterity and the enlightenment of the masses with the idea of Jiwon (Aim High), and formed the "Korean National Association", a large-scale anti-Japanese underground revolutionary organization.

He was a great patriot, a great revolutionary who devoted his whole life to the unity of the nationalist movement and the cause of liberating the country; he was a great pioneer in switching the Korean nationalist movement over to the communist one.

Mrs. Kang Pan Sok was also an admirable person. She was a wise and virtuous wife and a good mother. Moreover, she was a revolutionary who actively helped her husband in his struggle; she was an outstanding activist of the women's liberation movement who personally organized the Women's Association and opened up a new history of the Korean women's liberation movement; she was a great mother of Korea who actively pushed her son to the road of the revolution.

How great the trust and expectation which these prominent people put in their outstanding son were can be seen from the fact that they named their son "Song Ju" meaning that they wished him to become the pillar of the country.

The *Lullaby* which the President's father Mr. Kim Hyong Jik wrote and his parents used to sing to him was more meaningful. The words of the *Lullaby* that are handed down till today are as follows:

Hushaby, my baby, go to bed
Hushaby, my baby, you sleep sound

Be friendly to relatives, dutiful to parents
Lovely and precious, hushaby

Hushaby, my baby, go to primary school
Hushaby, my baby, already middle school, university,
Be a doctor, be a hero
For liberation of the country, hushaby.

While listening to the song, which a woman lecturer sang in the small yard of the President's birthplace, I could not calm down surging emotions.

How many lullabies are there in the world?

Nevertheless, all of them sang of maternal affection for their children. None of them contained lofty aims of believing and expecting their children to become heroes who would achieve the cause of the liberation of their country.

Who could dared to sing such a song to a baby wrapped in swaddling clothes?

It was a song of blessings, which only most far-sighted persons could sing to prodigious and outstanding baby who was born with the disposition given by the heavens.

The boy grew up fast to answer their expectations, was in study polite and warm-hearted to win the favor of people.

Children of about the same age followed him calling him "Our Head" and adults praised him as a "walking sun" for he was unusual and outstanding in all aspects. I think that it is inevitability of history that the President who was called sun from childhood, was called "Hanbyol" (one star) by his

comrades afterwards and became the sun of the nation the whole nation respected and followed.

Retrospections of the Poverty of the Great Men and "To Believe in the People as in Heaven"

Both President Kim Il Sung of Korea and my father led a poor life in their childhood. The experience of poverty by them in their childhood made them acquire the traits of the common people, know the sufferings of the people, share the same feelings with them and embark on the road of struggle for them.

Monthly Income "25 Rupiah"

Many people probably find it difficult to believe that my father who wore an imposing dress and sunglasses and always carried with him the Presidential baton was poor in his childhood. However, it is true.

How poor the life of my father's family was can be seen well by the fact that the monthly wage of his father who was a teacher was only 25 Rupiah. It is said that one dollar was 45 Rupiah in those days, so it is needless to say anymore of it. It is said that his father's income was not enough even to pay the house rent. The family was so poor that we had only one meal a day. Generally they used to eat maize mixed with something else.

In those days when he was indiscreet the most sorrowful time for my father was Lebaran holiday. The day when a fast month is over is like Christmas of Catholicism. On the day

people held a banquet, exchanged gifts and vied with one another in setting off firecrackers. Nevertheless, a banquet or a gift was inconceivable for my father's family. They could not buy even a firecracker because they had no money.

My father grew up with no shoes to put on. He could neither use a bathroom nor did he know a fork or a knife. All this saddened my young father and a small boat of life carried him to poor common people. So later, my father could proudly say in his autography: I "was born among the masses and grew up among them."

"Gruel" and "Sore Th oat"

Although the childhood of my father is said to be a deplorable time which passed in poverty, his poverty was much better than the poverty President Kim Il Sung of Korea suffered.

In Mangyongdae where President Kim Il Sung was born, one can hear many vivid stories about it. His poverty was a miniature of the miser caused by the Japanese imperialist colonial rule.

Japan ruled Korea as a colony for more than 40 years. It is incomparably shorter than that during which the Netherlands ruled Indonesia. However, it seems to me that the colonial rule of Japan was several times more brutal.

Lenin said, "Japan will fight so as to continue to plunder Korea, which she is doing with unprecedented brutality, combining all the latest technical inventions with purely Asiatic torture."

This indication of Lenin alone is enough to enable people

to guess the bitter life the Korean people suffered during Japanese imperialist rule.

All visitors to Mangyongdae may know, the house where the President was born is a too ordinary straw-thatched house which could be seen everywhere in the Korean rural areas in the past. The roof is straw-thatched, the household goods are too poor and the farming tools are worn out.

What makes the visitors most sorrowful is a misshapen jar. A jar was indispensable for Koreans who made pickles and soy and bean paste. However, it is said that the President's family, having no money to buy a proper jar, bought a misshapen jar that the people at the pottery were going to break. How grievous it is!

As I am writing this book now, the misshapen jar in the yard of the straw-thatched house flashes across my eyes and the grievous voice of a lecturer who told us about the heart-breaking story of the tearful poverty of the President's family in Mangyongdae is ringing in my ears.

The story about "gruel" and "sore throat" which the woman lecturer in pretty Korean dress told me is also one of the stories I was told at that time. Korean "gruel" is a meal, which poor people in this country ate instead of rice in the bygone days.

It was cooked by putting a small amount of grain and a large amount of water. Rice gruel was decent and poor people could not afford to eat this gruel. In this country white rice was called "ipssal" and boiled white rice was called "ipab". These terms originated from the fact that only those surnamed Ri ate them.

Therefore, it is said that the President told people this history and saw to it that "ipab" was renamed "boiled white rice". Boiled white rice was inconceivable for the President in his childhood; he always ate uncleaned sorghum gruel at every meal.

The gruel was prepared from unpolished sorghum, which was ground by a hand-mill. How difficult and painful it must have been to swallow such rough food. It was so that the President's uncle headed a gruel bowel. President Kim Il Sung remembered the difficult life of his family in Mangyongdae and wrote in his reminiscences.

"Working as tenant farmers from generation to generation, my family eked out a scanty living. The family life had been continued by a sole heir for three generations before my grandfather Kim Bo Hyon produced six sons and daughters. Then t he n umber o f m embers o f t he f amily i ncreased t o nearly ten. My grandfather worked hard to feed his children. At early dawn when other people were still in bed he would go round the village to collect manure. At night he would twist straw ropes, make straw sandals and plait straw mats by lamplight. My grandmother Ri Po Ik spun threads every night. My mother Kang Pan Sok weeded the fields all day long and wove cotton by night with my aunts Hyon Yang Sin, Kim Kuilnyo, Kim Hyong Sil and Kim Hyong Bok. …

All the members of my family toiled as hard as they could, but they could never afford enough gruel. Our gruel was prepared from uncleaned sorghum, and I still remember that it was so coarse that it was difficult to swallow."

Here is another story.

Once, the young President had sore throat. This disease was a kind of endemic disease, which broke out only in the western side areas of Korea in ancient times. This disease was expressed by the swelling of one part of the body without reason. If one applies acupuncture or takes other medicines, the disease becomes more serious and the patient suffers extreme pain.

The method of diagnosing this disease is funny. It is said that even if one chews raw beans, one doesn't feel. The method of treatment is also peculiar: if one rubs heated pork fat around the wound and eats it, the disease was cured completely.

So, the President who had a sore throat had to eat pork. It was a source of great anxiety for the poor family. Fortunately, his grandmother who had been worrying about the disease of her eldest grandson, barely managed to obtain several pieces of pork fat by tracing rumours.

The President ate some pork and rubbed the wound with the remainder after which his disease was cured. It is said that after that, whenever the President felt like eating pork he wished he had a sore throat again.

Like this, the President had numerous heartrending experiences of poverty.

The Story of the Clock of which the President's Grandmother was Envious

This story is also one of the numerous stories about the poverty experienced by the President. While the President was

spending his childhood at Mangyongdae, there was no clock in his house. Although the grandmother was not a covetous woman, she was envious of clocks hanging on the walls of other houses.

In those days the majority of the houses in the Korean rural areas had no clocks. So women used to guess the time by hearing the cockcrow. Since it was the case with everyone, there was no particular reason for the poor but honest grandmother, who was not covetous, to be envious of clocks.

Nevertheless, unequitable life raised inevitable requirements in many cases. The grandmother also encountered an inevitable need of having a clock.

It was since the President' s father began to attend the Sungsil Middle School in walled city Pyongyang 12 kilometers from Mangyongdae. Her son had to walk 24 kilometers to and from school. In order to ensure his school attendance she had to prepare breakfast at dawn. Because there was no clock in the house, sometimes she had to get up too early after taking a nap.

On other days she would prepare breakfast and not knowing if it was time for her son to leave for school, sit without sleeping for several hours, only looking out through the eastern window. At such times she would say to her daughter-in-law, Mrs. Kang Pan Sok, the President's mother, "Go and find out what time it is at the house behind."

However, Mrs. Kang Pan Sok would not enter the house, reluctant to bother the people there, but would squat outside the fence waiting for the clock to strike the hours. Then she would return and tell the grandmother the time.

How heartbreaking it is!

Although I have read many biographies of famous people in the East and West, I do not know a great man who was born and grew up in such a poor family as that of President Kim Il Sung.

I think that no leader of the former communist sphere, not to speak of the politicians who came of noble families in the West, was born in such a poor peasant family as he.

So far as I know, among the leaders of the former communist sphere there were many politicians from among the middle classes or rich families with the exception of Stalin who was born in the family of a cobbler in a local town Tbilisi of Georgia.

Marx, who created the Marxist theory, did not eat gruel nor know the grief of having a clock even though he could not lead a wealthy life.

Engels was born in a rich family and Lenin came from the family of the principal of a middle school.

Mao Tse-tung was born and grew up in a family, which had no worries about living.

The same is true of Zhu Enlai.

As a matter of fact they were all great men.

I say all this particularly because the impact I received from my visit to Mangyongdae where President Kim Il Sung was born and spent his childhood is too great and the hardships he suffered are too heartrending.

As I came to know these stories, I became well aware of what is the basis of the great President Kim Il Sung's popular traits and his noble human qualities.

Leading a poor life from his childhood, he shared the same air with the exploited and oppressed poor people; he breathed the same air with them and kept his heartbeat with theirs. That is why he came to know the situation of the people so well and love them so much.

His love of the people and his respect for them as well as his infinite dedication to the people are his natural disposition.

At the same time, they are a product of his keen experiences and are based on the idea and constant view of "believing in the people as in heaven."

"To believe in the people as in heaven" – this motto was the key to the greatest success of the great man who was born into the poor family.

Then, what is to "believe in the people as in heaven?"

Is there any one of the successive politicians who has not advocated that he works for the sake of the people? I want to see it.

"Seeing is believing". When I see can believe.

I am going to "show" to those people what the President's "To believe in the people as in heaven" is like by writing several stories here.

The Houses of the People Should Be Taller than the Offi Building of Power Organs

One day in March 1970, President Kim Il Sung visited Sariwon City, the seat of North Hwanghae Province. He who was looking around the city early in the morning with some officials stopped in the central street and, indicating a vacant

lot on the opposite side said;

"It will be good to build a ten-storied house there."

One official said that they would do as he taught and told him that they had left the good building site unused until then, because they thought it would not do to build a tall house there.

Listening to him, the President was doubtful and asked;

"Why?"

"It is because we thought, if a tall house is built there, the office building of the power organ on the opposite side would look low" answered the official.

The President knew reason and resolutely said;

"No. In our country where the people are the masters, it is not a flaw that the official building of the power organ is lower than the house of the working people. If the house is taller than the official building of the power organ, it is better"

"I see. We were mistaken. We will start the construction of a house immediately."

After some time a high house overlooking the official building of the power organ on the opposite side rose in the vacant lot. In this country the people are the "heaven"

The Grand People's Study House Built high in the Central Part of Pyongyang

There is a hill called Mt. Nam behind the platform of Kim Il Sung Square in the central part of Pyongyang. There is the Grand People's Study House here, which is the most magnificent and gorgeous building in Pyongyang.

The Grand People's Study House means a library where all people study; it was named by President Kim Il Sung.

There was no building in Pyongyang, which surpassed the Grand People's Study House in scale, height, and formative and artistic features. Tens of thousands of working people come here every day.

There is a story of how this immoderate building having "people" as part of its name was built in the center of the capital and at the highest place.

This happened one day in October 1973.

The President climbed Moran Hill, the highest of hills in Pyongyang. He was looking down upon a full view of the city, when he asked to officials:

"What building do you think would be good to be constructed there?"

He was indicating Mt. Nam. The officials could not give a ready answer. It was because they knew well what place it was.

A long time ago when he was leading the work of drawing up the blueprint for the rehabilitation and construction of Pyongyang, he taught that the area around Mt. Nam should be made the central part of the capital and that the city should be formed with the Mt. Nam as the axis, but he said that Mt. Nam itself should be left as a vacant lot.

With the passage of time Kim Il Sung Square was built in front of Mt. Nam and large and small buildings were erected around it, but the Mt. Nam was still left as a vacant lot. One year a designer, feeling sorry for the good site remaining still vacant, worked out a plan of constructing a government building there as in other countries and

submitted it to him.

At that time, he rejected the draft without even discussion.

Such being the situation, the officials could not readily answer his question about what building they thought would be good to construct at Namsanjae.

Understanding them, he did not ask them anymore and said meaning fully that, as a matter of principle, a building for the people such as a museum; a hall, a library and a palace of culture should be constructed at the central square.

A building for the people! What is the building for the people he is thinking of? The officials could not repress their anxiety to know that.

So far as museums are concerned, the National History Museum and National Art Gallery had been splendidly built on the right and left in front of the square; on Jangdae Hill not far from there, the Pyongyang Students and Children's Palace, a hall for schoolchildren, had been built already a long time ago and on the bank of the Pothong River the magnificent and gorgeous People's Palace of Culture was built in Korean style.

What remained out of those buildings, which the President had counted, was only a library. The idea of a library in the best place in the central part of the capital was inconceivable for the officials.

The whole story was made clear in December that year, two months since then. One day in the middle of December that year the President personally climbed Mt. Nam together with some officials. He said that it was high time to put that place in order, saying that there were already the People's Palace of Culture and the Students and

Children's Palace in Pyongyang, he proposed building a large library at the place.

Noting that children would study at the Students and Children's Palace and adults would study here, he said:

"If a library is built here on Mt. Nam, the people will like it."

Afterward, he saw to it that for the construction of a large-scale library, a nationwide prize contest for architectural designs was organized and that the best design was chosen and construction was carried out according to it.

He organized a powerful construction group, led the construction in person and ensured that a grand gorgeous Korean-style modern library, with classical beauty was built. President Kim Il Sung paid deep attention to the name of the library and ensured that opinions of broad masses were heard.

"Kim Il Sung Library" and scores of other names were proposed.

Nevertheless, he declined all proposed and named it "Grand People's Study House" and said nobody should change it. Thus, the hanging board "Grand People's Study House", instead of the name "Kim Il Sung Library" which the people wanted so much to give, was put up at the newly built large library.

Indeed, there is no more sacred being than the people in Korea. One can see the slogan "Serve the people" wherever one goes, and the state policies are titled "public education", "public health".

This country is people's Korea where the word "people" is put to all important and significant things such as the People's

Palace of Culture, the People's Army and the People's Hospital and so on. Korea is literally a people's country and this is entirely the great creation of President Kim Il Sung.

Carter Fails to See the People Although He Sees Anglers

This happened when Jimmy Carter, ex-president of the United States, visited Korea in the summer of 1994. President Kim Il Sung was having a talk with Carter on an excursion ship that was gliding fast sending off foaming waves on the lower Taedong River.

When the excursion ship was passing by one spot the President broke off abruptly, called a member of the suite and told him to slow down the speed of the ship.

Feeling strange about the speed of the ship suddenly slowing down, Carter asked him why. Listening to him, the President smiled and indicated one spot on the riverside. He said: Look over there. Working people are now angling on the riverside. If we make waves, we will disturb them.

So, let's not disturb them, anglers, even if we go a little slowly.

Carter could not repress his admiration because this was beyond his imagination. Carter saw only the anglers, but the President saw the people who were like heaven to him.

The eyes of the President, which see the people, first of all anytime and anyplace, were the sagacious eyes given by the poverty, which he had bitterly experienced early in his childhood. And his noble devotion for the people was also germinated and grew in poverty.

So, how could Carter who grew up in a rich family and is

himself a man of great wealth, understand the mind of the President which is as lofty as heaven?

However, he was moved by the lofty traits of the President and bowed his head whole-heartedly. After this meeting with the President, he said the famous words widely known to the world.

After his meeting with President Kim Il Sung, he answered without hesitation to a question, "What is President Kim Il Sung like?"

"President Kim Il Sung is a person who combines the qualities of the most famous first U.S. President George Washington, Thomas Jefferson and Abraham Lincoln. No challenger would stand a chance against him."

I am firmly confident that you readers will wholeheartedly believe the justness of his words while reading this book.

Unattained Study Abroad and "People-Bound Train"

Bandung or Amsterdam?

It was said from old times that there were a prominent father and a prominent mother behind great men. President Kim Il Sung and my father were happy persons who had fine parents.

A long time ago my grandmother predicted the bright future of her son with the foreboding of keen maternal affection. She was really a fine woman who guided my father to make a correct choice in the very important turning point of his life without taking a wrong way.

On June 10, 1921, my father graduated from a high school in

Surabaya, which was a cradle of nationalism to him and where he came to know something of Marxism.

Now that my father had received a diploma of graduation from the higher school, a wide road was open before him to go on to a university in the Netherlands. My father's heart leaped beyond description as he was looking at the vast blue ocean at the coast of the boundless Pacific.

My father who had graduated from the higher school with honors was dreaming to study in the Netherlands. However, his dream died away like a bubble the next day because his mother decisively objected to his study in the Netherlands. My father entreated his mother.

"Mother, those who graduated from our school go to the Netherlands automatically. Those who want to receive university education have to go to the Netherlands."

Saying so, my father passionately told her about the top-ranking universities of the Netherlands. Nevertheless, the words of his dreamful and passionate young son could not move his mother.

His mother refused in a few words:

"No. Absolutely no. I can never send my son to the Netherlands."

"But, mother, there isn't anything wrong if I study abroad, is there?"

"As a matter of course, there will not be anything wrong," said his mother before resuming:

"But it is a great mistake for you to go to the Netherlands. What fascinates you? Is it for an academic degree, or are you

going to marry a White girl?"

"I intend to study at the university."

"Then, stay here. First of all, we should think of our living conditions. I mean money. Going abroad needs too much money. And you have Indonesian blood. You should live among your compatriots. Never forget that your house, your destiny, your legacy are all in this island country."

How fine are her words! In these words, which did not need any other explanation, my grandmother's patriotism, her maternal affection and all the feelings of a meticulous mother who was worried about the future of her son were condensed as one. You have Indonesian blood. You should live among your compatriots. Never forget that everything yours is in the island country Indonesia!

My father recollected that what he heard was his mother's voice but that what made him follow his mother's words were the hands of the God. That's right. It can be said that his mother was a God-like being that decided his destiny.

Only God may know that a great man who could rise in this land would have been buried in the oblivion of history if it had not been for his mother and if my father had left for the Netherlands for study.

I think that one of the keys that enabled my father to succeed is the fact that he could strike strong roots among a hundred million Indonesian natives because he was a pure Indonesian native.

My loving grandmother, please accept the blessings of this granddaughter!

"The 250-mile ourney for Learning"

Respected President Kim Il Sung underwent a similar experience in the matter of continuing his studies at a school of higher grade. This happened one day when the President was attending a primary school in Badagou, China on the opposite side of River Amnok, the border between Korea and China.

He had gone there at the beginning of 1923 following his father. That day Mr. Kim Hyong Jik, his father, asked him to sit down. He asked him what he was going to do now that a few days were left until his graduation from the primary school.

The son said that he wanted to continue his studies at a school of higher grade. His parents regarded it as a matter of course to send him to a school of higher grade. So the son thought it strange because his father asked him over again.

After looking at his son with a serious look, he said that it would be a good idea for him to go to Korea and study there from that time on. The son was surprised to hear the unexpected words. In order to study in Korea he had to walk 250 miles after parting from his parents.

He was barely a little over 10 then and had never thought of such an instance. His mother who had been sewing in front of the son was also surprised and asked his father if it would not do to send him somewhere nearby.

Nevertheless, his father who seemed to have already made his decision said that they should send their son to Korea even if they felt regrettable and lonely right there. Then he said to the following effect:

"You have suffered a lot of troubles following your parents from your childhood. If you go to Korea again you may undergo more sufferings. But, I, your father, have decided to send you to Korea. A man who was born in Korea ought to know Korea well. If you go to Korea and know why our country was ruined, that will be a great gain.

Go to your native village and have experience of how miserable is the life of our people. Then you will know well what you should do."

His father's courageous decision was really uncommon. In those days it was a trend for rich families to send their children to Japan or other countries for study. However, Mr. Kim Hyong Jik decided to make his young son walk 250 miles and study in his own country.

The wise young President said that he would follow his father's intention. So he, who had just passed ten, went to his home covering 250 miles from Badagou to Mangyongdae and studied there.

When he reached his native home in Mangyongdae his grandmother rushed out towards him in stockings, embraced him and asked with whom he had come with and what means of transport he had used.

When she was told that he had come on foot alone, she could not restrain her surprise, saying, "Oh, My grandson! Have you really come here alone? Your father is crueler than the tiger!"

Although his studies in the homeland continued only for two years, he learned, understood and experienced really a lot

of things. His most important experience was that he knew well what his people were like and cherished the feelings of ardent love for his people. The people he came to know were simple, diligent and yet indomitable people; they were a strong people who did not yield to any difficulties and trials.

They were people who were courteous, kind-hearted, yet resolute and uncompromising towards injustice. Although national reformists begged for independence, the people were coming out in the struggle defying death.

He fervently saw in their looks the dignity of the nation, which could not be defamed by any force as well as their steel-strong, will for independence. Since then he regarded his people to be the best people in the world and came to have firm confidence that it would be quite possible to liberate the country if he organized and mobilized such people well.

So, already in those days when President Kim Il Sung conducted youth movement he put forward the slogan "Go among the people!" in order to educate and awaken the people and organize and mobilize them and ride the "people-bound train".

Cherishing his pure and sincere love for the people, which was formed already in his teens, he formed the "Down-with-Imperialism Union", a revolutionary organization which set a bold, clear and high aim and ideal.

It was in 1926 when the President was 14 years old. Then he organized the "Anti-Imperialist Youth League" and the "Young Communist League". And at the historic Kalun Meeting he elucidated the Juche idea, clarifying a new path of

the Korean revolution and formed the first party organization.

As a powerful weapon of the revolution, which united new and fresh young communists of the new generation, the revolutionary organizations formed by him were the engines of the revolution that went among the people and educated and aroused them.

He dynamically drove the "people-bound train" with the engine of the revolution. One year an unexpected event took place. I write that story below.

Refused Offer tudy in Moscow

This happened when President Kim Il Sung who had started his revolutionary activities with youth and student movement in his teens, was working in Wujiazi expanding the sphere of struggle among broad working people including peasants. A liaison officer sent by the Comintern came to Wujiazi to see him.

His comrades were pleased, regarding it as an extraordinary event. It was reasonable.

In those days the Comintern (the Third International organized by Lenin), as an international centralized organization of the communist parties of various countries of the world, had high prestige.

The instructions and decisions of the Comintern were unconditional and it had even the authority to dissolve the parties of other countries.

It was also the Comintern that ordered the disbandment of the Communist Party of Korea organized in 1925, advocating

that it could not play its role as the vanguard organization of the revolution since it was disrupted because of factional strife. Therefore, various factions that professed to be conducting the movement to rebuild the party, made potato seals and visited the Comintern in Moscow to get its recognition.

At that time President Kim Il Sung correctly saw their mistake and elucidated a new way of struggle. Ranks of fresh communists of the new generation were formed around him and some of them thought that they should organize the party independently and obtain the recognition of the Comintern.

He told them confidently: "If we carry out the Korean revolution well, the Comintern will come and recognize us."

And, as he had told, the Comintern sent a delegate.

In fact, it was unusual that the Comintern in faraway Moscow sent a delegate to a nameless secluded village in vast Manchuria of northeast China.

This meant that the Comintern recognized the communists of the new generation of Korea who were not infected with any alien trends and were appearing as the leading force of the Korean revolution doing everything at their own discretion and independently and, in particular, it recognized the activities and prestige of President Kim Il Sung.

The delegate of the Comintern could not repress admiration when he saw what had been done in Wujiazi by President Kim Il Sung and the communists of the new generation who were united around him.

He told the President:

"The practical struggle is important, but since you are a

promising young man, you should study."

Saying so, he produced a suitcase containing a complete set of a suit, a shirt, a tie and a pair of shoes. It seemed that the Comintern had firmly decided to give prominence to him. But, he resolutely rejected the request of the Comintern to study abroad. It is said that to the delegate of the Comintern who was repeatedly advising him to study in Moscow, he said:

"I am very grateful to you for your interest in me, but I intend to go to east Manchuria, to the masses. If I go to the Soviet Union and eat Russian bread, I may become a pro-Russian, which I do not want. There are many factions in Korea such as the M-L group, the Tuesday group, the Seoul group and others which I find distasteful. I cannot be the same. I shall learn Marxism-Leninism from my books."

His decision was very courageous. He knew well that there was a communist university in Moscow which was run by the Comintern and that Koreans were also studying there.

In those days "young communists" longed very much for the international communist university in Moscow. The yearning to study in the university was so great that even the song titled "Song of Study in Moscow" was sung in those days among young people in Manchuria. For this reason, once Cha Kwang Su, Pak So Sim and some other comrades of the President packed all the necessaries of life needed for his study and advised him to go to Moscow.

However, he categorically declined the offer to study in Moscow of which people were generally envious, as he firmly believed the justness of his father's words that one should

know Korea if one wants to carry out the Korean revolution as well as his own conviction, "Go among the people!"

He who got on the "people-bound train" already in his teens with such great conviction underwent a lot of precious experiences. His experiences were that the people were the almighty, and omniscient "heaven" and a great teacher.

I am going to tell you only a few of the numerous stories.

Even if Th ee People Gather, They hould Unite

When President Kim Il Sung was conducting out his activities in Jilin, China, his name enrolled at the Yuwen Middle School, he used to go to rural areas leading an art propaganda troupe. Once they gave a performance in a mountainous village of Koreans called Funzidung. When the first performance was over, an old man named Cha Cholli came to see him.

Cha was his family name and Cholli meant a thousand ri, i.e., 250 miles. The nickname was given to him because he walked 250 miles a day. He was an erstwhile fighter for independence who was personally acquainted with the President's father.

When he saw the President, he was attracted by the latter's wise look at once and said, "With a son like you, Mr. Kim can rest easy in his grave."

That day, the old man told the President a lot, which later serve as a lesson for him. What was particular among his stories was the story of how a Japanese capitalist ruined a Korean national entrepreneur.

He said:

"Have you ever heard how the Kyongsong Match Factory

was ruined? The matches produced at this factory had the trademark "Monkey" and were very famous. It is said that the Japanese built a match factory in Korea, but they did not make much money from it because of the Korean matches.

So, after contriving various artifices they bought many boxes of "Monkey" matches, went to a desert island and there soaked all the matches in water. Then they died them and sold them at the market. Everyone who bought these matches found that they were not fit for use because they did not light, so they bought only the Japanese factory's matches. The Kyongsong Match Factory went bankrupt; they sold the trademark to the Japanese company. That is what the Japanese are like."

Although the truth of the story is not confirmed, it was a story which showed well the crafty nature of the colonialists. He said that we should unite our efforts in order to fight against such crafty bastards. He added that the volunteer's movement had come to nothing because they had failed to be united and deplored the fact that the units of the Independence Army were being chased by the Japanese because the soldiers did not unite their efforts and acted separately. What should we do, then?

"Koreans should fight the Japanese in unity even if they are only three."

Thus, President Kim Il Sung strengthened among the people the principle of unity which was the will of his father and his own experience. Looking back upon that time, he wrote in his Reminiscences:

"Thus when we took the art propaganda troupe and mixed

with the people we not only awakened the masses but also learned from them. Therefore, whenever I meet officials I tell them earnestly to go among the people. I always emphasize that going among the people is like taking a tonic and that failing to do so is like taking poison.

One can find such people as old man Cha Cholli only when one mixes with the people. One finds philosophy, literature and political economy among the people."

"The e is a Way Out even if Heaven Falls"

Another thing which President Kim Il Sung experienced on the people-bound train" was that the people were not only righteous and sincere, but also were the most dauntless, intelligent and sagacious beings.

Among the people whom the President always remembered whenever he told such stories there was a woman called "aunt in Jiaohe"

The following happened when he, who had been leading the work of restoring the destroyed underground organizations after his release from the Jilin Prison, went to Jiaohe.

In order to restore the underground organization in Jiaohe, he first needed a place where he could stay and carry on his activities. Only then could he find out those people he needed and have contacts with the organization of the International Young Communist that was working there.

After thinking over whom he should visit, he called on Jang Chol Ho who had been a company commander in the Independence Army and was on friendly terms with his

father. Jang Chol Ho had built a rice mill and was engrossed in his business. He was delighted to see the President, but he did not invite the latter to stay at his house.

He seemed to worry about being harmed in case he hid the President who was seeking shelter. The President said nothing more and called on a man who was aiding the independence movement.

He, too, welcomed him, but suggested that they part after taking Chinese food at a Chinese restaurant. At that time President Kim Il Sung felt bitterly that if one's ideology and faith change, one would forsake friendship and humanity. Calming down his throbbing heart he called at the house of a member of the organization.

However, as he had anticipated, the man had hidden himself somewhere and was not at home. At this moment when he was quite at a loss, there were policemen on his heels. Having no place to hide himself, he asked the woman, a neighbor of the member of the organization, for help.

She said to him, "You seem to be in danger, though I don't know who you are. Be quick and go into the kitchen."

She put on his back the baby she was carrying on hers, and said, "I will dispose of everything. Sit quietly and tend the fire."

While he, who had suddenly become the baby's father, was tending the fire in the kitchen, the policemen came and asked the woman, "A young man just came this way. Where has he gone?"

The woman replied, "What kind of young man? No one has come to my house."

Then she said in Chinese, "Now that you have come here, have a meal, please."

The policemen completely ignored the President who was tending the fire with the crying baby on his back and went somewhere else. After a while the police came back and told him to come out as they wanted to send him on an errand.

At that time, too, the woman dealt with the situation composedly and he averted the danger. She said;

"How can this sick man run an errand? If you have some urgent errand, I will do it in his place."

Then she went on the errand in his place. That day he received deep impressions from that woman who was a total stranger. It was that an unstained and sound sense of duty as a comrade to which revolutionaries could entrust their lives without hesitation was found among the working people.

Later, when the commanding officers of the Korean Revolutionary Army and the leaders of underground organization were told the story from him, they said that he was born under a lucky star, and that so "heaven" helped him. He said to them:

"It was not because I had good luck that the warlords failed to catch me but because the people were good. I think that the people are precisely Heaven and the people's will is Heave's will."

Thereafter, too, in the course of the revolution, he encountered numerous dangers which threatened his life. However, each time benefactors appeared and helped him. One of them was old Kim who saved him who was unable to move because of chill and exhausted soldiers from the jaw of death in the

snowstorm of Tianqiaoling where almost all stanch soldiers who had set out on the expedition to north Manchuria, were sacrificed and only 16 of them remained alive.

At that time the orderly of President Kim Il Sung was crying, saying:

"The Commander is ill. The "punitive" troops encircled us ring upon ring, and with an hour they will rush into this timber shop but we cannot find a way out. That is why I am crying."

Listening to him, old man Kim presented a good idea for the unit to take the Commander out of the encirclement safely, by using the master, a stooge of the Manchuguo, and in the end, all of the unit could come out safely with his help.

I am sorry that I could not tell of his good idea here in detail, but that time, too, he could have a more profound philosophy on the existence of the people, and, remembering that time, he, in his reminiscences, wrote"

"But for old man Kim, I would not have been plucked from the jaws of death, and together with me the expeditionary force would have been destroyed there in the backwoods of Tianqiaoling. The old man did us a great service."

Among his benefactors were also the family of old man Jo Thaek Ju living in Dawaize in the hinterland of Liaoling who wrote an immortal beautiful story in the history of the Korean revolution by helping like kinsmen the expedition unit that had braved the snowstorm of Tianqiaoling and showed all their sincerity to his treatment.

Staying in the house of old Jo Thaek Ju in Dawaize, President Kim Il Sung was recovered soon thanks to their sincere

assistance, and said;

"Thank you, Grandfather. I owe my life to your family."

Old man Jo said:

"Don't mention it. God gave birth to you General Kim, and you have been saved in this log-cabin by God's will, not by my family."

The love of the people without desiring rewards was so pure, and the reverence of the people for the sun to save the country and people, was so ardent. He met many good people when he was writing a history of numerous bloody battles in the Manchurian wilderness and on the crags of Mt. Paektu, braving death, and even after he became the head of state after triumphal return home following liberation of the country.

Among them were an old man from Popdong who walked to the north looking up to the Big Dipper during the temporary strategic retreat, the hardest time of the war against the United States, saying, they could win when they follow General Kim Il Sung, the ten party members of Rakwon who encouraged him, saying reconstruction is out of question after victory in the war, and the old woman in the post-war days who said, the factionalists say this or that about the people's living, but we support only our Premier.

President Kim Il Sung found himself among the people and led the revolution to victory amid their support and encouragement, and in the course, cherished a great motto. The motto is that though the sky falls there is a way out. It is based on the great faith that when believing in the people and relying on the strength of the people there is nothing

impossible.

North-South high-level talks were held in Pyongyang in 1990. He met the "Prime Minister" of south Korea who had come to the talks. The south Korean "Prime Minister" was surprised to see him full of vigor and passion, and wanted to know the secret.

Great President Kim Il Sung said:

"As you see I am not old. I am an optimist. There is a Korean saying that though the sky falls, there is a way out. I am not getting old, because I am always living optimistically."

When he met the delegation of the Japanese Kyoto News on June 1, 1991, he said:

"My philosophy is that though the sky falls there is a way out."

This philosophy of his is powerfully touching our heartstrings today, too, as the whistle of Juche, as an echo of the 20th century sounded on the great orbit by President Kim Il Sung who found out the valuable truth running aboard the "people-bound train" throughout his life with the motto of "believing in the people as in God".

The "Spirit" of the Koreans

In the people-bound train the President Kim Il Sung keenly experienced that the truth of independence was also among the people. The following is what happened when he was transforming the village of Wujiazi at the riverside of Liaohe, which the nationalists had built as an "ideal village", into a revolutionary village.

The nationalists who had been active in south Manchuria had bought the virgin soil at the riverside of Liaohe, moved Koreans there, made paddy fields and built this village. In this village there were such organizations as the Youth Association, the Association of Schoolchildren as well as the village council, an autonomous organ. Every year on August 29, the day when Japan fabricated the annexation of Korea by Japan, the village people gathered and sang the song "National Humiliation Day" with tears in their eyes.

It was no wonder that the people of Wujiazi called their village a "heaven", it being out of the reach of the Japanese army and police and the reactionary Chinese warlords.

The influential figures of the village never tolerated the infiltration of any heterogeneous ideological trends into the village. So the young communists of new generation could not easily gain their foothold there.

It was in October 1930 that he went to Wujiazi. The reason was that if he revolutionized this village, the last stronghold of the Korean nationalist force in central Manchuria, it would be possible to bring about a great change in revolutionizing the villages in the whole area of Manchuria and in the northern border area.

However, the village elders of Wujiazi shook their pipes and threatened that those who would introduce socialism into the Liaohe plain would not be safe; they complained that the young people in those days were affected by an alien ideology. They thought that, if the crazy communist uprising that had ruined Jiandao was tolerated in Wujiazi, the village would not

be safe, either.

President Kim Il Sung, who heard this report from the political workers there, realized that the main thing was to work well with the influential people of the village. So he put his efforts into the work with Pyon Tae U, an old man who supervised all the affairs of the village, including those of the village council. He was at the head of both the group of elders and the village itself. The villagers called him Pyon Trotsky because he frequently mentioned Trotsky. In the years of the Independence Army he had contact with Mr. Kim Hyong Jik, the President's father. He had been to the far eastern region of the Soviet Union. He had the blue-covered membership card of the Communist Party of Koryo.

It was impossible to reform the bigoted village elders and make the village revolutionary unless he was won over. Therefore, the President called on Pyon Tae U following his son Pyon Tal Hwan who was in charge of the Association of Fellow Peasants of the village.

On the first day old man Pyon talked more than the President did. He sat haughtily, his legs crossed, and as he spoke he now and then tapped his pipe on the floor. He merely gave the President condescending advices every time addressing the latter as "you youngster". He said he was glad to see Mr. Kim's son, but treated the latter as just a boy. He apparently thought that it did not matter to treat him that way because he did not reach his twenties.

When old man Pyon asked his age, the President said he was 23, five years older than he actually was. He behaved

politely, listening to old Pyon to the end even though what he said did not stand to reason. Old man Pyon said that young people would find fault with him, labeling him as feudalistic and so on. He said it was interesting to talk to the President and frequently invited the latter to his house.

One day the old man invited him to dinner. After chatting with him for a while, the old man asked suddenly.

"Is it true that you youngsters have come here to do away with our 'ideal village'?"

"Do away with your 'ideal village'? Why should we destroy the results of you old people's hard work, though we are unable to help you?"

He spoke from his heart.

Upon hearing this, old man Pyon asked him to tell him frankly what they thought about their "ideal village".

President Kim Il Sung thought it was time and said:

"We don't think it bad. Why should we hate the 'ideal village'? You have built it to get the wandering Korean exiles in this foreign land to settle down in one place and live in comfort. It is marvelous that you have built a Korean settlement of this size on the swampy land on the Liaohe. You old people must have worked very hard to build it."

Satisfied at his complimentary remarks, the old man stroked his moustache and could not repress his delight. He no longer called him "you youngster".

The old man said proudly.

"Yes, that's it! As you will learn, there is neither a policeman nor a prison nor a government office here. The Koreans

themselves through an autonomous organ called the village council deal with all the village's affairs in a democratic way. Where else in the world is there such an ideal village? "

Kim Il Sung said.

"Sir, I think it is patriotic of you to have built such a village. But do you think we can achieve the independence of the country by building villages like this?"

The old man shut his mouth for a while before he heaved a sigh and said:

"No, we can't. You have touched me on the raw… That is why I am in anguish."

Having heard the old man, Kim Il Sung persuaded him.

"It is impossible for a ruined nation to build 'ideal village' in a foreign land. Sooner of later, Japan will invade Manchuria. So we wish to transform this village into a revolutionary village that fights for the liberation of the country rather seeing it so quiet."

The old man said:

"That means you are going to spread socialism. No, you can't. When your father said in Kuandian in 1919 that we should switch over to the communist movement we all supported him. But, while following the Koryo Communist Party, I discovered the communists all to be crazy. They were all involved in factional strife, since then I've been disgusted by a mere mention of communism."

And he asked Kim Il Sung if they had any special policy for making the village of Wujiazi revolutionary.

Kim Il Sung spent a good while explaining to him how they

had made such villages as Jiangdong, Xinantun, Naidaoshan, Kalun and Guyushu revolutionary.

After listening to him attentively, the old man said: "What you say smacks of Stalinism, but I am not against you. Nevertheless, you should not pay tribute only to Stalin. There is some sense in what Trotsky said." He then expounded Trotsky's theory.

Yet he did not seem to be opposed to Marxism-Leninism. Anyhow, it was certain that he had an extremely good impression of Trotsky. Out of curiosity Kim Il Sung asked, "Why do you worship Trotsky?"

The old man said:

"Frankly, I don't worship him. I just don't like the young people nowadays worshipping people from major powers indiscriminately. Trotsky is Trotsky and Stalin is Stalin. Young people nowadays are in the habit of quoting from them, but I don't see what is so great about their propositions. It is for the Russian people to consider their propositions. The Korean people should speak in the spirit of Koreans in order to promote the revolution in their own country, don't you think?"

The spirit of Koreans!

Kim Il Sung could not repress his excitement at the old man's words that were right in a sense. He understood that the old man mentioned Trotsky whenever he opened his mouth, not because he worshipped him, but it was ill-natured words to oppose some people who absolutized things of big countries unconditionally, saying Marx said this and Lenin and Stalin said that. He interpreted the old man's words as just warning

them young people, warning them against the blind worship of everything, against talking only about other countries, about Russia and Stalin, and against copying everything from Russia. His judgment was not wrong.

The old man said:

"I don't care what the young people do… But I will fight to the end against those who put on airs, chanting foreign propositions without having their own principles."

What the old man said convinced him more that his consistent stand against factionalism, flunkeyism and dogmatism was correct and that his policy of carrying out the revolution with the efforts of his own people and by believing in their own strength was entirely correct.

I am not going to write about how he won over the influential people of the village later and how he transformed the village into a revolutionary one.

What I want to emphasize is that he went among the people like this aboard the "people-bound train" and found the truth of the Juche idea that the most sagacious and powerful beings in the world are the masses of the people and that one must carry out the revolution independently and creatively by believing the popular masses and relying on their strength.

What is the Juche idea, then?

Isn't there anything in common between the Juche idea and "Marhaenism" put forward by my father?

I am going to write about it in the following part.

The Juche Idea and "Marhaenism"

It is reasonable that great men born of the people find their idea among the people. There were common features between President Kim Il Sung and my father in this respect, too. This can be understood well if we consider how my father came to find out his idea called "Marhaenism". My father in his autobiography about how he came to have Marhaenism wrote:

"It was when I was twenty that a strong political tendency dawned on me. At first it was a precious idea which endlessly molested my head, but in a short time it became the programme on which our movement was to be based.

The working people are indescribably poor in our island country. They are financially too poor to rise socially, politically and economically. However, everyone is his own master and does not rely on anyone else. A carter has his own horse and cart and does not hire labor. All private fishermen have fishing implements. Peasants are the owners and consumers of their produce.

The majority of our populations are such people. They are not proletarians as they have means of production. Then what are they?

One fine Sunday I rode bicycle around the suburbs of Bandung. Many peasants were working in the small patches of their land. Each of them was tilling about one third of hectare. A peasant was digging land with a hoe. He was working in rags. A thought suddenly crossed my mind that the typical peasant symbolizes my people."

My father approached him, introduced himself to him and

chatted.

"Whose land is this?"

"My land"

"Whose hoe is this?"

"It is also mine."

"Who is the owner of all these tools?"

"I am their owner."

"Do all these satisfy your demand?"

"I eke out a miserable livelihood."

"Do you also plough other's land?"

"No, I don't. I work hard only for my land."

"But you are poor, aren't you?"

"You are right, I am poor."

That was an impressive chat between my father Soekarno and the peasant in the paddy fields in the suburbs of Bandung.

The peasant was Marhaen. His name is as common in Indonesia as Smith and Johns in England. My father thought Marhaen can be used as a symbol of millions of Indonesians like him for the universality of the name and his situation.

That evening he gave a lecture at a meeting of young people he had organized.

"Marhaen has few means of production. He has few things and tools, but has things necessary for himself. Millions of poor people of our country do not work for others, and nobody works for them."

He named his idea defending the interests of millions of poor "Marhaens" Marhaenism and said: "Marhaenism is socialism of Indonesia."

As aforesaid, Marhaenism is an idea representing the interests of the poor petty proprietors of Indonesia, which is fundamentally different from the proletarian idea Marxism-Leninism and seems to have nothing in common with the Juche idea.

But I think they have something in common as they are ideas derived from their people and ideas for their people. I am pleased with it and I think it played a great role in establishing the close relations between the two leaders. To love the people is to love the country and nation and it is patriotism. Genuine patriots have no "border". The commonness of patriotism substitutes the gate of the border.

Today Marhaenism is known only to Indonesians and those who study Indonesia and sociological dictionaries interpret it as "Indonesian petty Bourgeois socialism".

Today the Juche idea of President Kim Il Sung is an immortal banner blazing the road of mankind and is being more widely disseminated. Therefore, many foreign reporters and personages requested him to explain about the Juche idea.

President Kim Il Sung gave answers to all their questions, and what impressed me most deeply is "On some problems of our Party's Juche idea and the government of the Republic's internal and external policies", answers to questions raised by journalists of the Japanese newspaper *Mainichi Shimbun* on September 17, 1972. His famous work clearly sums up the course of creating the Juche idea and its basic theories and principles.

I can not dwell on all the contents. So instead of giving an explanation, I would like to quote some propositions

concerning the theoretical issues of the Juche idea. Truth is simple, clear and understandable to everybody.

"In a nutshell, the idea of Juche means that the masters of the revolution and the work of construction are the popular masses and that they are also the motive force of the revolution and construction. In other words, one is responsible for one's own destiny and one has also the capacity for hewing out one's own destiny."

"Establishing Juche means adopting the attitude of a master towards the revolution and construction. Since the masters of the revolution and construction are the masses, they should take the responsible attitude of a master towards the revolution and construction. The attitude of a master is expressed in an independent and creative stand.

…

You could say that the independent stand is concerned with defense of the rights of the masters and discharging the master's responsibility, whereas the creative stand concerns the development of the role of the people, the masters, in remaking and reconstructing society."

"In strengthening the independence of the country, it is essential to strengthen self-sufficiency in the economy as well as political independence."

"Self-defense and self-protection are basic to man's nature. A country must also have the means to defend itself. The line of self-defense in national defense is an essential requirement of an independent and sovereign state."

"The basis of the Juche idea is that man is the master of

everything and decides everything. Remaking nature and society is also for the benefit of the people and it is work done by them. Man is the most precious treasure in the world and he is also the most powerful. All our work is for the people and its success depends on the way we work with them."

"The Juche idea is not a theory for theory's sake; it is the guiding idea of the revolution and construction in our country that we put forth on the basis of the experiences and lessons obtained through our complicated revolutionary struggles."

President Kim Il Sung said the Juche idea is the guiding idea of the Korean revolution and construction, but it is too humble words. The Juche idea throws more brilliant rays as the days go by along with his great name.

The first Juche idea study organization was formed in Mali of Africa in April 1967, the International Institute of the Juche Idea was founded in April 1978 and today more than 1, 000 Juche idea study organizations have been formed and active in 100-odd countries of the world.

Famous works of President Kim Il Sung were translated and printed in over 60 languages at publishing houses of upwards of 90 countries including the Japanese Miraisha Publishing House, Egyptian Ali Taun Publishing House, Ecuadorian Voluntad Publishing House, Norwegian CM Publishing House and many publishers of Russia.

His famous work "Ten-point programme of great unity of the whole nation for the reunification of the country" was widely published and disseminated by 1,000 plus media of more than 120 countries within a year. It shows well the authority of the

Juche idea and its immortal vitality.

That is why a foreign personage said: "The creation of the Juche idea by the great leader Kim Il Sung is of incomparably greater human historic significance than the provision of fire to human being by mythical Prometeus."

Another foreign personage said: "The Juche idea is an encyclopedic revolutionary theory which is a revolutionary theory of eternal present tense applicable to any age."

I believe it is too just estimation.

Incarnation of the Human Touch and Moral Obligation

The Two Great Men and Their enefactors

President Kim Il Sung and my father had many unforgettable benefactors in their eventful lives. They, with noble moral obligation, showed lofty virtues of doing justice to the kindness of their benefactors.

The first benefactor of my father was Tjokroaminoto. He was the first teacher who let my father, the son of his friend, study while staying in his house and brought him up as a patriot and genuine nationalist. When my father was attending the Bandung College of Technology, the Dutch colonialist authorities arrested and jailed Tjokro. It gave a great mental attack to my father. Recalling that time my father wrote in his biography.

"The authorities threw Tjokroaminoto into prison, judging that the Islamic organization agitated the strike in Garut. His family had a hard time of it. Their misfortune was mine. What to do? Should I go ahead and think of myself and future hope, or step back and think of Tjokro and of what he had done for

me in the past?

In front of me was a road of gold connected with diploma of the university and in my back a road to a dark land, to dark future.... Passport to the world of the white or faith in his principle?"

At the crossroads, my father did not hesitate to take the latter. He immediately left the college in mid-course, returned to the port city Surabaya and, working in the railways, looked after the family of Tjokro.

Here is another story.

It was in February 1938 that my father was transferred to Bengkulu of South Sumatra after exile in Flores. The police watched him day and night. Whoever visited my father had to be summoned and interrogated. My father's only friend was the Principal of the Indonesian School. He knew that he would be put in the blacklist, but often visited my father together his little daughter. My father did not forget it, and after becoming President, looked after his family and arranged his daughter's marriage.

My father's friend President Kim Il Sung also had many benefactors and so sincerely took care of them and their children that he was praised as the best incarnation of noble moral obligation. His benefactors included not only fellow countrymen but also many foreigners.

Chinese Zhang Weihua and Russian Novichenko were all benefactors who sacrificed themselves for the security of President Kim Il Sung, and his noble love and moral obligation for them are widely known to the world.

President Kim Il Sung always valued moral obligation and, in his reminiscences, wrote:

"A living man must not forget the dead. Only then can their friendship be lasting, true and immortal. If the former forgets the latter, such friendship will die out there and then. Frequent remembrance of dead friends, wide publicity of their distinguished services, good care of their children and loyalty to their last wishes: these are the moral obligations of the living men to their predecessors, martyrs and deceased revolutionary comrades."

President Kim Il Sung was literally the incarnation of moral obligation, who put his noble idea of moral obligation into reality.

I have keenly experienced it in life.

It is a story of an unforgettable memory that my father enjoyed invariable support and encouragement from President Kim Il Sung in his last miserable days.

Two Visits of Consolation

The noble moral obligation of great President Kim Il Sung is not only the benevolence of repaying to the benefactors for their kindness but also noblest obligation faithful to the once-sealed relations forever. His ever-lasting invariable noble moral obligation frequently reminds people of his uncommon love and care for Norodom Sihanouk of Cambodia who was once out of power.

But today I would like to tell another story which is not known to the world to inform the world people of his noble

moral obligation. As is known to all, political riot took place in Indonesia in October 1965, Nasakom was undermined and my father was tragically put in detention after losing power.

The "September 30 Incident" was not the intention of my father and had nothing to do with him, but he was driven out of the political arena and disgracefully put in house detention. The agony of my father was beyond description.

Former close associates and friends seldom visited him and once friendly diplomats, too, did not come. In those obsolete days, my father, once so busy among crowded people from tea time early in the morning till late in the evening for tens of years should have painfully remembered his exile in Bengkulu of Sumatra Island and Ende on Flores Island.

My father had nothing to say to us his children, and my mother and we, his children, too, had nothing special to say to him. What to say, and how?

Around that time, one day in August 1968 a guest called on my father unexpectedly. The visitor was the Ambassador Extraordinary and Plenipotentiary of the Democratic People's Republic of Korea to Indonesia well known to my father and to us, too.

I can not forget the joy and emotion of the day. When nobody dared to come, only the Ambassador Extraordinary and Plenipotentiary of President Kim Il Sung visited us.

My father's face, thitherto clouded with agony, beamed with a bright smile as before. My father hugged the Korean ambassador and did not let him go. It was not without reason.

My father knew well that the Korean ambassador's visit was

not of his own decision, but implementation of the instructions of President Kim Il Sung he was respecting. He knew too well that though he had friendly relations with heads of state of tens of countries, President Kim Il Sung was the only person who could order the ambassador of his country to visit him under the then circumstances.

That day the Korean ambassador conveyed the kind greetings and warm consolation of President Kim Il Sung to my father. My father expressed thanks for it and requested the Korean ambassador to convey his warm regards to President Kim Il Sung. My father said he had nothing to do with the internal situation and with the so-called "September 30 Incident" and impressively reminisced two meetings with President Kim Il Sung, saying he had met him at the Non-Aligned Summit, but now he was in such a situation.

The Korean ambassador's visit was a great encouragement to my father, and inspired by the noble moral obligation of President Kim Il Sung, he seemed to have recovered confidence.

But later my father's health failed rapidly and he had to be carried to the hospital. To my father who was liberal and sociable, the hospital was like a "prison". The Korean ambassador visited my father in hospital once again.

President Kim Il Sung had sent him to visit my father in his sickbed. It was 1970 when my father was spending his closing years in sickbed.

As Indonesian saying goes that the sun can not be arrested, my father's deteriorated sickness turned to be helpless. Sensing the end of his life, he shed tears, seeing the Korean ambassador

coming again. It was not because my father was sentimental. It was not the tears shed by an aged man over his miserable life. It was because he was moved by great President Kim Il Sung who did not forget him, but sent the ambassador again to give pleasure and strength once more before he breathes his last. All our family members were also moved to tears.

That day my father, remembering his unforgettable meeting and deep relations with President Kim Il Sung, sincerely praised time and again that he was a great man of uncommon humanity and he was the only great man of his kind.

Parting with the ambassador my father shed tears again, saying he wanted to see His Excellency President Kim Il Sung again, and then he would have no regret though he dies.

My father closed his eyes without forgetting him. I also do not forget him.

President Kim Il Sung is not with us now, but his noble love and favor shown to my father and my family shines forever as an immortal song of most beautiful great moral obligation.

***

My father breathed his last in the sickbed in hospital in June 1970. He wanted to be buried by his father and mother, but even that was not allowed.

But nobody could blow off the fragrance of virtues of a great man who devoted his life to the country and nation despite raging waves and disasters in life. Mourners came in endless procession not only from Jakarta but also from unknown small island villages and paid respects to him.

The mourners' cries rang far and wide across the ocean.

The mourners sincerely wished that the life of my father who had fought in defense of the soul of the nation would be remembered in history.

The will of the people was that of the Heaven. In October 1986, 16 years after the death of my father, the government restored the honour of the first President who had declared the independence of the country as "hero of the nation", representing the demand of the people. Soekarno Order also became effective at home and abroad.

On June 6, 2001, grand functions were held on the occasion of the centenary of the birth of my father. At the function held at the Bung Karno Stadium that day the President of Indonesia praised the merits of my father for the country and people and said he was a prominent personage of the Indonesian people.

Various other functions were held such as commemorative seminar and sports games. The history did not forget, but fairly turned up the wick of a man which would have been burned up without leaving trace in the harsh tempest.

That time I remembered President Kim Il Sung who had sent the ambassador to my father. How happy President Kim Il Sung would have been, who understood my father more than others, estimated him most fairly and firmly believed that his honor would be restored. I felt my heart warming up with the thought that my deceased father, too, would extend greetings to President Kim Il Sung who must have believed that the day would certainly come.

Great Patriots, Great Revolutionaries

"Mother-Tongue Reader" and "Bahasa Indonesia"

I think revolution starts with patriotism. I believe there can not be revolution apart from patriotism.

President Kim Il Sung and my father were both revolutionaries, but the roads of revolution they covered were quite different. But they understood each other so deeply and established so deep relations because of the common idea of patriotism and the common denominator of patriotism.

We can say so comparing the stories of the two persons concerning mother tongue. It was one day not long after President Kim Il Sung began to study at Changdok School staying his mother's old home in Chilgol after coming back to the homeland. His grandfather on the mother's side brought textbooks he would study at the fifth grade. He received a package of books with excitement and opened them one by one. But he was disappointed opening the "*Mother-Tongue Reader*" because it was written in Japanese.

In a bid to extinguish the spoken and written language of Koreans and enslave them, the Japanese colonialists forced them to use Japanese as official language at government offices, courts and schools from the beginning of their occupation. They did not allow the use of Korean language, and declared the books written in Japanese as "*Mother-Tongue Reader*".

He asked to the grandfather why the Japanese book was titled *Mother-Tongue Reader*.

The grandfather could not give an answer to the grandson's unexpected question, but only sighed. Kim Il Sung did not ask further and erased the word " *Mother-*" and wrote "*Japanese*"

in its place. The *Mother-Tongue Reader* turned into *Japanese Tongue Reader of* in an instant.

Attending the Changdok School for some days he found some boys speaking Japanese in classroom, street and playground. Some boys even taught a few Japanese words they knew to others. Few boys criticized or considered it wrong. They seemed to think it unavoidable as the country was occupied by Japanese.

Whenever he found such a thing young Kim Il Sung used to tell them that Koreans should speak in Korean. When he came to his mother's old house in Chilgol from Badaoguo in China, some villagers said he could speak Chinese well as he had lived in Manchuria for a few years and requested him to speak in Chinese. Boys of the Changdok School, too, told him to teach Chinese. But he told them not to do so, saying why they should speak other's language when they have their own excellent language.

Similar thing happened when my father was studying at a high school. When he attended a meeting of the "Study Club", an extracurricular organization of students, the Chairman said: "We, the new generation must all perfectly know the Dutch." All others supported him.

My father was angry. But controlling himself, he said quietly: "No. We should not speak Dutch."

The room became as quiet as dead. He took the floor and made a hot speech.

"Our proud language was once called Nusantara. Nusantara means thousands of our islands. Many of them are larger

than the Netherlands. The population of the Netherlands is incomparably smaller than ours and only six million people speak Dutch. How can the small country on the opposite side of the earth dominate our powerful nation who defeated Kubilaikhan in the past?

I think we must, first of all, master our language. Then let us learn English, which is used as a diplomatic language today. The Dutch are white and we are yellow. Their hairs are yellow and curl and ours is straight and black. They are thousands of kilometers far from here. What should we speak Dutch for?"

His speech caused a row. But later my father consistently called for using Bahasa Indonesia or Indonesian language and it enabled Indonesia with 86 dialects to speak and understand each other with one language.

That happened when President Kim Il Sung was in his teens and when my father was just beyond boyhood.

In the Jilin Prison and the Sukamiskin Prison

The life of a revolutionary is that of rigorous struggle accompanied by trials. Especially the revolutionaries of the past who raised the banner of national liberation to save their nation from ruin and achieve independence of the country had to struggle, ready to die.

President Kim Il Sung and my father were such revolutionaries. Like many revolutionaries, their first trials in the rigorous struggle were trials in prison.

President Kim Il Sung was imprisoned in the Jilin Prison in northeast China and my father in the Sukamiskin Prison in

Java Island on the far-off Pacific, President Kim Il Sung at the age of 17, my father as a hot-blooded young man of 28. There was big difference, but I found something in common in their life's experience. It is that the life in prison was the first trial in struggle to both of them, and mysteriously they started struggle in prison in 1929.

I do not know it is accident or inevitability. Anyhow, it reminded me of President Kim Il Sung's meaningful words that alternation of reunion and separation is the life of revolutionaries.

How can we call it an accident that on the different roads of struggle, they met and separated at many crossroads of life? They had many differences, but I think it was inevitability coming from the commonness of the lives of the two future great leaders of state on the road of struggle.

First, I would like to say about my father's prison life. He became gradually seasoned in struggle. Already in his 20s, he became a young popular leader of the nationalist movement and was called Bung Karno. He was an excellent orator. His passionate speech excited the people and they followed him. Touching their heartstrings, he eloquently expressed his love and feelings.

In the days of Bandung University, he said: "Why do volcanoes like Kelud erupt? It is because the hole of the crater is closed. Volcano cannot keep the internal pressure from erupting. Volcano accumulates internal pressure and explodes in the end. Our nationalist movement will also do so, if the Netherlands closes our mouths and suppresses expression of

our feelings.

Friends, we will also erupt one day like volcano. When we explode, Amsterdam will be blown up into sky. Today I challenge the colonialist government... What's the use of assembling hundreds of thousand people to make a petition? Why should we 'courteously request' the 'respected government' to build schools? 'We courteously request'… this is the constant rhetoric of our leaders. We have never been attacker even once. Our movement does not pressurize but begs. Let us not beg, but pursue the policy of standing on our feet."

Awakening the people with such speeches, my father himself became more matured and established his world outlook.

In 1926 the "Down-with-Imperialism Union" organized by President Kim Il Sung in the Manchurian wilderness at the tender age of 14 raised the torch of struggle, and that year my father, a 25-year-old young man, organized the "Bandung Study Club", the predecessor of the National Party of Indonesia, and under the support of his colleagues, founded the National Party in 1927 and became the Chairman. In December 1928 he realized its merger with other important nationalist parties and became the leader.

The Dutch colonialist authorities did not let him go as he pleased. My father was arrested in December 1929. In prison my father began to write advocating his justice. There was not a thing to write on. So he cleaned toilet ware, put it on the bed upside down and wrote on it, and with what he wrote defended himself at the court.

It was the *Indonesia Menggugat* later widely known to the

world. My father's forensic speech at the court was the best of oratory. It was not without reason that an American met my father and said he was an orator who can be compared to the most famous orator of the world.

At the court my father said:

"The court prosecutes us as criminals. Why? What have we fought with to be incriminated? With knives? With rifles? With bomb? Our weapon was the plan for paying equal taxes. It is unjust for the marhaen whose maximum annual income is only 60 guilders to pay same tax with Europeans whose minimum annual income is 9,000 guilders. ...Our aim is to oppose the power of the Governor General which is like legal terror. The only dynamite we laid is our joint voice. The theatre of our battle is venues of public meetings and general media.

We have never gone beyond the border of the law... Yes, we are revolutionaries. The revolution we speak about means a radical movement aspiring after an immediate change. It is contrary to patience. …Crushed worm will turn. We do the same. ...I am not an offender who plotted an armed uprising. But if the movement I lead can make progress through my pain rather than my freedom, I will devote my body to mother Indonesia with pleasure."

The next day, judgment was announced, and my father was sentenced to harsh penalty, four years in a cell 2.25 meters long and 1.5 meters wide. So he was thrown into the Sukamiskin Prison.

Of the tragic story, I will mention two impressive episodes. One is that he was accustomed to eat quickly in prison. The

prison had 900 prisoners and its canteen had 25 tables, at which ten people could hardly sit. So the prisoners ate in turn and the time was six minutes. When the gong was struck, prisoners entered the canteen with bowls and spoons, and when the gong was struck again six minutes later, had to stand up and go out. The prisoners were treated like horse and cattle. Unless they ate quickly they could not eat even what little food given. So like other prisoners my father was also accustomed to eat quickly and could not correct the deep-seated custom. Even at state banquet, he used to finish food when a half of the guests were not served with food yet. Our advice was useless.

Another one was the custom of sleeping. He was accustomed to sleep on a narrow and stiff wood bed of the prison. So even after tens of years, he could not bring himself to sleep on soft feather mattress or under feather quilt.

During my visit to Korea, I heard that leader Kim Jong Il was used to take nap in the car on his hundreds of miles of field guidance tour every day. So he feels uncomfortable on soft bed.

How warm and how painful I felt at that time I can not tell. The great devotion to the country and people taken over from President Kim Il Sung made him used to such a painful custom.

Due to the stormy resistance of the *Indonesia Menggugat* and public demand, my father was released after two years and respected as the hero of the nation. Before release from prison, he wrote an article titled: "I will start a new life."

Upon his release, the chief warder asked him if he would really start a new life.

My father said:

"The leader does not change for fear of penalty. I came into the prison to fight for freedom. Now I remain unchanged."

It was my father priding himself as a revolutionary. But to the strong-willed man, too, prison life was not easy. Recalling his days in prison, my father said:

"As soon as I was put in prison, my hair was cut and prisoner's number was attached to my back. The cell was 60 inches wide, a half of which was occupied by bed and as long as a coffin. There was no window, but a hole on the door to see through only from outside. Of course, in the past I thought of such a thing a thousand times, but finding myself in prison I felt like dying."

It was the honest confession of the fearless 28-year old young revolutionary.

Needless to say about the pain of prison life to 15-year old Kim Il Sung.

But in the young boy you will see a noble-spirited, resourceful, respectable, dignified great revolutionary with perfect qualities of the leader. When he was 14, President Kim Il Sung formed a revolutionary organization and left the Hwasonguisuk School, a military academy founded by nationalists, halfway, and moved the theatre of his struggle to Jilin in mid-January 1927.

Enlisted in the Yuwen Middle School in Jilin, President Kim Il Sung, studying progressive ideas, founded the Anti-Imperialist Youth League and the Young Communist League with the Down-with-Imperialism Union as the parental body. He trained young communists of new generation and built

revolutionary ranks clear of out-dated ideas. At the same time he tempered the members of the organizations in struggle and expanded struggle among broad sections of the masses.

As a result, the current of new era called "Jilin wind" swept the whole of Manchuria. The vigorous youth and students movement, denunciation of the reactionary warlords who caused the Zhongdong railway incident and expression of solidarity with the first socialist country Soviet Union—these struggles quite different from the previous movements drew attention of the Japanese imperialists and Chinese reactionary warlords who sensed the existence of a new revolutionary force led by Kim Il Sung.

The Japanese imperialists who had snitchers at every place and were watching every move of the Koreans, watching for a chance to invade Manchuria, availed themselves of the opportunity to instigate the Chinese warlords to arrest Korean revolutionaries and independence champions. Jilin, a hub of overseas political movement of Korea seemed choked with the tyrannical atmosphere.

Around that time a reading circle was disclosed in Jilin Middle School 5 and members of organization began to be arrested and eventually Kim Il Sung was arrested by the reactionary warlords. Reactionary police of China cruelly tortured the prisoners to detect the organization network and its leadership in Jilin City. They also inflicted tortures including finger-twisting on Kim Il Sung, too.

He said nothing, but that he had read leftist books. When he was conducting activities in Jilin, many leftist books published

in the Soviet Union and Japan were translated and published as it was the time of great revolution in China.

There were many good books in the library of the Yuwen Middle School. Kim Il Sung was elected chief of the library twice and, managing the library, read excellent books. It was at that time that he read Marxist-Leninist classics and books explaining them including "*The Communist Manifesto*", "*Th Capital*", "*State and Revolution*" and "*Wage Labour and Capital*". He also read many progressive literary books including "*Th Mother*", "*Iron Flood*", "*Blessing*", "*An Authorized Life of Ah-Q*", "*On the River Amnok*" and "*A Boy Wanderer*".

These books could be obtained legally. So he consistently resisted, saying, what is wrong for a student to read books? We read books that are on sale at the bookshops. If you are going to incriminate anyone, you should lay the guilt first on the authorities who permitted the publication and sale of the books, shouldn't you?

His greatest worry was the disclosure of his struggle in support of the Soviet Union to the warlord authorities during the Zhongdong railway incident.

At that time, the Jiang Jieshi reactionary government persisted in the anti-Soviet moves after destroying the Kuomintang-Communist cooperation. Following the unsuccessful Guangzhou popular uprising the Jiang Jieshi government shot to death the Soviet consul in Guangzhou and broke off diplomatic relations with the Soviet Union. The anti-Soviet move was the boldest move of Jiang Jieshi who was flattering the imperialist powers in order to secure their protection and support.

The warlords stirred up anti-Soviet sentiments among the Chinese people, crying: "We are against red imperialism".

Taken in by the propaganda conducted by the warlords, some university students and young intellectuals made such bellicose and provocative outbursts as "Let's take the Ural Mountains and seize Lake Baikal!" and "Let's feed water to horses at Lake Baikal!"

Taking advantage of the atmosphere, the reactionary warlords attacked the Zhongdong railway. According to an agreement, China and the Soviet Union had been managing the railways jointly through a council, sharing its property and equipment half and half. The warlords seized the wireless station and management bureau by force of arms and captured the railways, unilaterally revoking the Soviet Union side's right of control. Following the seizure of the railways they invaded Soviet territory.

At that time some Right-wing students at Fengyong and Dongbei Universities, abetted by the reactionaries, took up arms against the Soviet Union.

In order to check the anti-Soviet acts of the Jiang Jieshi Kuomintang government and reactionary warlords, President Kim Il Sung roused the members of the Young Communist League and the Anti-Imperialist Youth League in defense of Soviet Union, the socialist country.

President Kim Il Sung roused organizations to distribute handbills in many places in the city exposing the nature of the anti-Soviet moves of the warlords and went among the Chinese people, telling them that the seizure of the Zhongdong

railway and the invasion of Soviet territory was an inexcusable act of perfidy against the Soviet Union that had repealed all its unequal treaties with China and given material and mental aids to China after the October Revolution, and that it was reactionary moves to obtain loans from the imperialists.

After that some Chinese people who had been deceived by the propaganda of the reactionary Kuomintang and warlords and taken a hostile attitude towards the Soviet Union, changed their attitude. In conjunction with the young progressives of China, President Kim Il Sung dealt a severe blow to the students of Fengyong University who took up arms to attack the Soviet Union.

In those days the reactionary Kuomintang warlords did not tolerate the pro-Soviets. They brought people who had acquaintance with him and asked about his activities and if he had had anything to do with the Soviet Union.

Those brought by them included people who knew him in detail like Mr. Choe Tong O, Director of the Hwasonguisuk School. After Mr. Choe's return, too, there was no special inquisition. It seemed that Mr. Choe had said nothing against Kim Il Sung.

It was fortunate. The warlord authorities treated him only as the chief of the reading circle. But they did not release him but transferred him to the Jilin Prison. The prison was a cross-shaped building with the passages stretching in four directions-north, south, east and west, and the passages were lined with cells on both sides so that the warder sitting in the centre might have a full view of them. His cell was the second on the right of

the northern passage. Being in the north, the room never got any sun all the year round. So it was unbearably nasty and, in winter, the walls were white with frost. It was autumn when he was transferred to the prison, but it was as cold in the cell as in winter.

The warlord authorities employed national discrimination in their treatment of the prisoners. The warders would use insulting language like "Korean swines" and "homeless Korean devils" and fetter Korean students with heavy leg irons. The authorities drew a distinction between Korean and Chinese political prisoners in their diet and in the use of even poor medical facilities.

In the suffocating prison, too, Kim Il Sung was never frustrated, but groped for a way to struggle. First of all, he decided to contact the comrades outside and restore and put into action the dislocated organizations within the shortest possible time, and to wage a struggle and hasten the day of his release.

But the contact with outside could be made easily unexpectedly. To repair the cells, the prison authorities kept him together with infamous prisoners for a while and it offered him a favorable opportunity.

When he was transferred to the ordinary criminals' cell, a prisoner known as "Kkangthul" sat cross-legged and demanded him to treat him something, either money or food. A newcomer to the cell, whoever he was, was in duty bound to keep the rule, "Kkangthul" demanded the newcomer give him something. He was extremely fierce and wild creature.

Ordinary people might be overpowered by his physical

strength and command, but Kim Il Sung was not. With a sturdy build as an Asian, he was tall for his age with an uncommon stamina and did not obey injustice.

He fired back pointblank: "I have spent days in the interrogation room undergoing severe ordeals, so where do you think I can get hold of money or food? As for a treat, would it not be more reasonable for you who have been in this cell a long time to give me one? At this "Kkangthul" was tongue-tied and merely sat glaring fiercely at him, turning alternately pale and red."

He had always been so despotic that none of the other inmates would nurse him, but just looked at him with indifference, though he was in sickbed.

But kind-hearted Kim Il Sung could not remain indifferent to him. He covered the patient with the quilt he had brought when he had been taken to the prison and called the warder and asked him to fetch some medicine for the sick man from the prison hospital.

Because he nursed the sick man devotedly, he soon got well. After that his attitude towards Kim Il Sung was different. Seeing that an infamous offender who was so perverse and fierce that even the gaolers had found it hard to deal with had suddenly turned obedient to Kim Il Sung, a secondary school student, warders were struck with wonder. All the more so was warder Ri who had hated the "Kkangthul" who was always gruff.

Warder Ri was mystified to see Kim Il Sung marking the fierce man obedient and gradually respected him. Warder Ri was poor and unwillingly became warder to earn bread. Kim Il Sung

came to know that the younger brother of warder Ri was having problems because he could not buy articles he needed for his marriage though engagement was near at hand.

He took measures for comrades to solve the problems. A few days later warder Ri came and thanked Kim Il Sung for the kind turn of buying the necessary marriage articles, and asked if it was true that he was a communist. When he answered that he was, he said he could not understand it and went on to remark with great heat, "They say the communists are all bandits, but can it be true that such good people like you rob others? If it is true that you are a communist, it's absurd to label the communists as bandits."

So Kim Il Sung told him kindly. "The communists are people who struggle to build a society free from exploitation and oppression where all people are equally well-off. We, the Korean communists, are fighting to expel the Japanese imperialists from the land of Korea and win back lost country. The rascals who are rich and powerful vilify the communists as bandits because the communists want to overthrow the rotten society where the landlords, capitalists, local squires and traitors to the nation rule the roost."

At this the prison guard said, nodding his head, that he had been taken in by the false propaganda of the authorities because he was ignorant, but that from then on he would never take them at their word.

In this way President Kim Il Sung educated and won over warder Ri and through him, contacted with outside and led the prison life comparatively easily. But there was also a very wicked

warder. President Kim Il Sung instigated student prisoners to give him a hard time and taught him manners.

He encouraged revolutionaries in prison and gave them confidence, and analyzed the experiences and lessons of the national liberation struggle and the communist movement in Korea.

He believed that the revolution in his country would emerge victorious only when it was undertaken on their responsibility and by the efforts of their own people, and that all the problems arising in the revolution must be solved independently and creatively.

Later President Kim Il Sung said it was the starting point of the Juche idea. While in prison, he pondered over the way to lead the Korean revolution in the future and conceived a far-reaching plan. He racked his brains about the forms and methods he should employ in the struggle to defeat Japanese imperialism and liberate the country, how the anti-Japanese forces should be united, how the party as the leadership body of the revolution should be founded and what tasks he should undertake preferentially after his release.

He pondered over the problems again and again. Having found clear answers to the problems he felt an irresistible impulse to get out of prison as early as possible. Together with comrades who were thrown into prison because of the "student incident", he prepared a struggle for release.

A hunger strike was the method they adopted. They started the struggle with a grim resolve to battle until their just demands were met. The hunger strike involved even the criminals he

had educated. It was surprising that even the criminals who used to fight among themselves over a bowl of food turned out in the struggle.

The comrades outside the prison gave them active support in their struggle. They exposed the inhuman treatment in the Jilin Prison and won public support.

The warlord authorities yielded to their united struggle. So he was released early in May 1930. As he walked through the gate of the prison after conceiving the road of revolution, his heart was full of confidence and enthusiasm.

"Bima" and the Brilliant "Sun" of Korea

A revolutionary has his genius recognized and get the authority of the leader in practical struggle.

My father's practical weapon of struggle was first of all, his extraordinary eloquence of speech touching the people. His tongue was sharper than knife and ax as an Indonesian saying goes. His other weapon was pen. With the pen name "Bima", my father wrote many articles agitating patriotic nationalism.

He wrote with the pen name "Bima" that is to say, "Great warrior" in order to evade the suppression of the Dutch colonialist government. He published over 500 articles with the pen name. Indeed he was worth of the "Great warrior". Many people knew "Bima" though they did not know Bung Karno. Even his father and mother did not know "Bima" was their son Soekarno. The uncommonness of "Bima" was recognized by the leaders of the Indonesian nationalist movement.

Dr. Douwes Dekker Setiabudi was a patriot who lived in

exile for many years. In his 50s, he said to the active members of his National India Party:

"I don't want to continue to be called a veteran. I will remain a fighter for the Republic of Indonesia until I go to the other world. But I met young Soekarno… I would like to tell you that I wish none other than Soekarno would be my successor."

My father did not betray his expectation. He had his faith, his strategy and was confident that he could realize it. He established his world outlook already in his university days. It was a kind of "compound" nobody could think of.

My father considered himself a nationalist politically. From the theological point of view he regarded himself as a theist. But ideologically he declared himself as socialist. Of course, the socialism he mentioned was not socialism leading to communism. According to him, his socialism was Leftist radicalism calling for an early change. It meant change of the present capitalist and imperialist order.

My father said: "Our socialism is compound. We took political equality from the Declaration of Independence of the United States, spiritual equality from Islam and Christianity and scientific equality from Marx. We added nationality to the compound. This is Marhaenism. And the spirit of mutual support and assistance was added to it. The combination of all these is Indonesian socialism."

My father intended to embrace the ideas and demands of all sections and all forces of Indonesia as his idea.

When he was living in exile in the secluded Endeh Village of the isolated Flores Island, he purified his compound and

formulated the state programme called "Pancasila" (5-point principle), and on June 1, 1945 when fascist Germany was already defeated, the defeat of Japan was imminent, unfolded the 5 "pearls" embracing the ideas and demands of various sections of Indonesia at the Preparatory Committee for Independence. They were nationalism, internationalism, democracy, social justice and sole religious belief.

Thanks to the Pancasila, "Bima" could become the Hero of the nation, the father of independence who built the divided Dutch East India Islands into an independent state named Indonesia.

The man who unites the nation can be hero of the nation and praised as father of Independence.

The life of President Kim Il Sung, a great saint of the 20th century who was a friend of my father is the most glorious history of the great hero, great father who liberated the country and nation from the colonial rule of fascist dictatorship under the banner of great unity of the whole nation.

The leader of the nation should have the idea, political view and ability to rally the nation and the nation should recognize their leader and have loyalty to infinitely respect and follow him. Only then can the leader be successful and the people realize their desire.

I was more firmly convinced of it through the naming of President Kim Il Sung after the sun.

In his childhood he was called "Jung Son" by his grandmother meaning the eldest grandson of the family and his name was Song Ju. But when he was leading the youth movement in

Jilin, he was named "Hanbyol".

Correctly speaking it was from the autumn of 1928, and Hanbyol had the deep meaning of morning star expelling darkness from the night sky and heralding new day.

Before liberation, the Korean people eagerly longed for a star of hope, lodestar that would blaze the correct road and unite the nation as a unified force.

Bearing upon such earnest desire of the nation, President Kim Il Sung rosed as a star of hope, bright star of national resurrection blazing the night dark sky and set out on the road of sacred revolutionary struggle to save the country and nation.

He blazed a new road of struggle, saying they should not follow in the footsteps of the Bourgeois nationalists and early communist activists who had hindered the revolutionary movement, wasting time with empty talks and factional strife, and, under the banner of anti-Japanese struggle united the youth and students and people drawn here and there due to the scramble of the factionalists for hegemony. Not only youth and students but also great personages well-known at that time admired his uncommon political view and mature organizing ability. Well-known independence champion like O Tong Jin said to the people, "If you truly want to struggle to liberate the country, go to young man Kim Song Ju."

Representing their expectation and trust, young communist by the name of Kim Hyok wrote the song *Star of Korea*.

Morning star rose in the night sky of Korea
Blazing beautiful land brightly

The day will b eak on down-trodden Korea
Twenty million look up to the morning star

Looking up at the dark night sky
We see the groaning homeland
Let's not change pledge for revolution
Twenty million look up to the morning star

With brigandish Japanese imperialists defeated
Morning star will be brighter on this land
Korea, let's sing of freedom

Twenty million look up to the morning star

The greater the love and expectation of the comrades and people, President made harder his resolve to be true son of the people and devoted his all to the people. Valorously overcoming the trials in prison and tempest of suppression, eventually he formulated the road of the Korean revolution, that is, to wage an organized armed struggle against the Japanese imperialist aggressors believing in the people and relying on their united strength.

Arms to arms!

This slogan he presented and went deeper among the people. The song *The Star of Korea* loudly rang on the Manchurian wilderness of the vast continent and people's respect for him became more ardent.

The famous old man Pyon Tae U in Wujiazi where Kim Il Sung turned an ideal village into a revolutionary village, expressed

admiration at his noble personality and superb leadership ability and said: He should be held in high esteem. He is the only man who can liberate the occupied country and save the nation. Why should we liken him only to the star? He is the sun that rose high in this dark land.

It was an expression of the unanimous feelings of the people who greeted the brilliant sun of the nation, their genuine leader who would bring the new spring of liberation they desired so much.

At a meeting of members of the Korean Revolutionary Army held one day in the autumn of 1930, revolutionary Cha Kwang Su said he would make an important proposal and proudly said: All the villagers of Wujiazi praise him as the sun of the nation. It is the unanimous desire of not only the villagers of Wujiazi but all the fellow countrymen of Korea.

He continued: "Why should we compare great Comrade Hanbyol, i.e. One Star, respected by all the fellow countrymen to the morning star alone? Representing the unanimous wish of the people I would like to propose name him Kim Il Sung by using the letter meaning the sun instead of the letter meaning star."

Along with a stormy applause, all present chanted "Welcome! Warm welcome!"

Later on April 25, 1932, President Kim Il Sung founded the Anti-Japanese Guerilla Army and as 20-year old young general, declared a war on Japan for liberation of Korea. Until the gun report of the anti-Japanese war turned into the toll of liberation of the country, he fought numerous bloody battles

and experienced all sorts of ordeals.

The history of the world revolution recorded many instances of rigorous struggle, but did not know so arduous sanguinary struggle as those fought by the Korean anti-Japanese guerillas led by President Kim Il Sung.

But the Anti-Japanese Guerilla Army defeated the formidable one million-strong Guando army of Japan and won the final victory.

What was the secret?

Many things may be said concerning it, but what must be mentioned is the idea of the great unity of the nation presented by President Kim Il Sung who wisely led the whole nation to the sacred war for liberation and the realization of the national united front like the Association for the Restoration of the Fatherland, a brilliant crystallization of the idea of the great unity of the nation.

In realizing his idea of the great unity of the nation, the main masses are workers and peasants.

But his idea and intention was to rally not only workers and peasants but also patriotic forces of broad sections, literally the entire nation under the banner of liberation.

Hence complicated and intricate problems were raised. How to estimate the nationalists and what to do with them? What to do with national bourgeoisie and patriotic landowners? What to do with the so-called communists accustomed to factional strife acting within the sphere of the early communist movement?

He wisely solved such complicated new problems which

were not raised before and thus founded such anti-Japanese national united front as the Association for the Restoration of the Fatherland, roused the entire nation to the anti-Japanese resistance and eventually accomplished the cause of national liberation. They are immortal exploits performed by President Kim Il Sung praised as "legendary anti-Japanese war hero" and "Sun of the nation".

***

I have said what I wanted to say and as much as I know about the two persons who had many things in common in their lives.

Concluding this chapter, I would like to stress once again that I am proud of Bung Karno who had his friend in so great a teacher, so great a revolutionary and so great a man. All the titles and high posts of president and head of state conferred on my father were not too much to him.

If anyone asks why, I will answer once again. He was a friend of great President Kim Il Sung, and President Kim Il Sung was his friend!

II

GANEFO

Before the Opening of the Great Festival of Friendship and Solidarity

Both Indonesia and Korea won independence in August 1945 and began to create a new life. But the two countries underwent commotions of war and tormented by complicated internal and external situations. So they did not know each other for a long time.

Since the two countries stood in front of the third world under the banner of anti-imperialism and anti-colonialism, especially Korea was known to the world as the country of the legendary winged horse *Chollima*, the two countries took hands and new history of friendship and solidarity opened between the two countries.

In developing friendship and solidarity between the two countries, the GANEFO (Games of the New-Emerging Forces) marked a turning point.

President Kim Il Sung and my father were meritorious

persons who printed inerasable footprints in the history of GANEFO which was a great festival of new emerging forces.

My father was the originator of GANEFO and did everything in his power for its success as the General Chairman of the Organizing Committee of GANEFO and head of state of the host country.

President Kim Il Sung was the most active supporter and sponsor of GANEFO and all victories and successes of GANEFO are unthinkable apart from his name.

That is why GANEFO is specially dealt with in this book concerning the deep relations of the two leaders and with the history of friendship and solidarity between the two countries. All social phenomena have the cause and motive of the result. There were also the cause and motive that promoted my father to propose GANEFO. It was the unjustifiable sanctions of the International Olympic Committee against Indonesia.

As is known, the 4th Asian Games, alias Asian Olympics took place in Indonesia in 1962. Indonesia did not allow entry of Israel and Taiwan of China. It was an exercise of independent right of a sovereign state Indonesia. But the IOC adopted an unjust resolution prohibiting the participation of the Indonesian sports organization in the International Olympics.

My father resolutely rejected the wrong attitude, saying to live like a lion for one day is better than to live like a sheep for hundred years. Sanctions are bound to face resistance. Just resistance to the wrong sanctions was as powerful as eruption of volcano.

It was in February 1963 that the just volcano erupted in Indonesia, an insular country with many volcanoes. At a meeting of the Indonesian National Front in February, my father declared the withdrawal of the Indonesian Olympic Committee from the IOC and independent hosting of the Games of New-Emerging Forces. He announced that the Preparatory Committee of GANEFO would be organized and ordered Minister of Sports Maladi to direct its affairs.

Later on April 25th, 1963 the first Asia-Africa Journalists Conference opened in Jakarta. Present there were delegations, delegates and observers of more than 40 countries including Indonesia and the DPRK.

The message of greetings sent by President Kim Il Sung was read out amid warm applause of all present and my father made a speech. The conference discussed issues concerning international tension caused by the imperialist policy of aggression and war and issues on strengthening mutual cooperation.

The conference also adopted a resolution supporting GANEFO. Amid the international atmosphere mounting, a meeting of the Preparatory Committee of GANEFO was held in Jakarta between April 27th and 29th, 1963.

The meeting officially announced that the Games of New-Emerging Forces would be held and all countries in Asia, Africa, Latin America and Europe were invited to the Games. It also decided to hold the First GANEFO in Jakarta under the sponsorship of the sponsor country.

Invitations were issued to 67 countries.

It was President Kim Il Sung who sent warm support and encouragement to GANEFO before others. He let the Korean Physical Culture and Sports Guidance Committee inform the GANEFO Preparatory Committee of the dispatch of a sports team and art troupe. My father was very excited to receive a report of Minister of Sports Maladi on it.

President Kim Il Sung, paying deep attention to the preparations for GANEFO in Korea, frequently acquainted himself with selection of athletes and their training and gave specific instructions on the size, organization and performance items of the art troupe to visit Indonesia during GANEFO.

On October 10th, 1963 (significant anniversary of the Workers' Party of Korea), one month before the opening of GANEFO, he met Korean athletes and artists to be dispatched to the games. He encouraged them, stressing that GANEFO is an important opportunity to further strengthen friendship and solidarity with the Asian, African and Latin American countries struggling against the oppression and exploitation of the imperialists and had a picture taken with all of them.

President Kim Il Sung made so painstaking efforts for the preparations, clearly understanding the importance of GANEFO in strengthening solidarity and friendship of the new-emerging nations and in the joint struggle against imperialism and new and old colonialism.

Before the opening of GANEFO, he sent a kind message of greetings to my father.

His Excellency Soekarno
General Chairman of the Organizing Committee of the Games of New-Emerging Forces,
Jakarta
November 9th, 1963

I, in the name of the entire Korean people and the government of the Democratic People's Republic of Korea, extend warm congratulations to Your Excellency General Chairman of the Preparatory Committee of the Games of New-Emerging Forces and, through you, to the First Games of New-Emerging Forces and participants in the games.

The Games of the New-Emerging Forces will make a great contribution to the strengthening of friendship and solidarity of the peoples and sportsmen of the countries fighting against imperialism and colonialism and to the promotion of development of physical culture and sports in those countries.

The Korean people warmly welcome the Games of New-Emerging Forces and extend active support and solidarity to it.

Believing that the First Games of New-Emerging Forces would be held victoriously, I wish the Games and Your Excellency great success in your work.

Kim Il Sung
Premier of the Cabinet of the Democratic People's Republic of Korea
Pyongyang

Needless to say, the kind message of greetings contributed to the success of the Games and gave confidence and pride to my father.

GANEFO was a great holiday to the Indonesian people, the Korean people and all peoples of the new-emerging countries. Some articles carried in the daily *Rodong Sinmun* representing Korea on November 7th that year show well how warmly the Korean people greeted the holiday and how they enjoyed the holiday together with the Indonesian people with one mind.

I would like to quote parts of the articles representing the heated atmosphere of GANEFO.

> Jakarta before Games of New Emerging Forces
> In Jakarta, capital of Indonesia, a beautiful country thick with palm trees, the sun rises and sets in the mood of GANEFO. When an unusually red sun rises we see first flying flags, placards and posters in the streets. Slogans "For the success of GANEFO!", "Flare up, GANEFO!" are seen on the houses facing the street.
> Symbols of GANEFO are posted on the ships and cars running along the street in the morning. Youngsters aboard boats in the Bay of Jakarta with quiet ripples raised and waved oars with letters of GANEFO.
> Ports and airports are in a festive mood welcoming delegations coming from many countries every day.
> So far delegations of 47 countries have arrived.
> When our delegation arrived in Jakarta, its citizens lining up the street running the port to the heart of the city, waved hands, chanting "Korea", "Korea" each time cars hoisting

flags of the DPRK passed by.

The arrival of our delegation caused great sensation here. "Harian Rakyat", "Indonesia Herald", "Indonesia Observer" and all other newspapers carried photo-accompanied reports of our delegation and stressed that our delegation is one of the largest delegations and it included runner Sin Kum Dan.

When he met our delegation on the 30th, Indonesian Minister of Sports Maladi expressed thanks to the Korean delegation for its active participation in GANEFO held under the banner of anti-imperialism and anti-colonialism and said he regarded the Korean delegation as his brothers.

In the games lasting between November 10 and 22, sportsmen from many countries will compete in 20 events including field and track for the honor of their countries.

Local newspaper "*Sports*" wrote that the Indonesian people pay deep attention to the Korean team in the future football matches.

The Senayan Stadium where our sportsmen will demonstrate the spirit of Chollima, is most fervent with atmosphere of GANEFO. Every day many citizens assemble and make full preparations at the stadium with total space of 225 hectares including the main 100,000–seat stadium, football and basketball courts, gymnasium, hockey rink, swimming pools, tennis and volleyball courts.

Around the stadium about 8 square kilometers from downtown is international village with 112 excellently

furnished blocks of lodgings and a 50,000-square meters friendship park. A flag of the DPRK hoisted together Indonesian friends with a due ceremony is fluttering in the middle of 6 two-storey houses billeted to the Korean delegation. Korean sports team and art troupe are spending pleasant days as in Pyongyang amid sincere hospitality of the friends.

Despite hot weather over 30 degrees centigrade every day, Korean sports persons are training hard with conviction of victory.

GANEFO art festival precedes the games. More than 60-strong Korean art troupe are actively rehearsing to show golden art vibrant with the spirit of Chollima to the Indonesian friends.

The international village where the Korean delegation is staying is often ringing with favorable song of Indonesians including "Palm Island, My Indonesia".

First GANEFO Flame-Bearers Start for Jakarta

The First Game of New-Emerging Forces flame-bearers started for Jakarta via Surabaya on October 30. The torch of flame was kindled on Madura Island, East Java Province on October 28.

That day a grand kindling ceremony was held on Madura Island. Addressing the ceremony Governor of East Java Province at that time expressed the hope that the flame of GANEFO would rouse anti-imperialist, anti-colonialist fighting spirit.

The torch-bearers will arrive in Jakarta on November 10, the opening day of the First GANEFO and kindle the torch stand at the opening ceremony.

> Indonesia advances under the banner of anti-imperialist struggle.
> O, fighters!
> Arise! freedom can be won only through sanguinary struggle." The cry of one of the Indonesian poets that powerfully calls the people to the merciless struggle against imperialism represents the fighting will and confidence of the indomitable people of this country.
> The Indonesian people have a brilliant tradition of struggle against the imperialists and colonialists. It was in 1596 that the Dutch colonialists stretched their tentacles of aggression to Indonesia. Since then the Indonesian people waged an arduous struggle for independence for 350 years.

At that time I was a little girl in my teens, but today, too, I do not forget the festive mood of those days when I, wearing black pitji cap and marvelous dazzling white dress with a red belt, would go out to welcome delegations of many countries. I also participated in the ceremony of welcoming the Korean delegation at the Jakarta port.

That time the Korean delegation came to our country after making a long voyage aboard the 20,000-ton class passenger ship *Kwanghwaho*.

Though tired of long voyage, the Korean sportspersons and artists waved hands to us welcomers without an air of fatigue.

A foreign reporter saw the Korean delegation and said the Korean young folks are flowers of GANEFO. I have got an impression that they are not only most beautiful, but also most powerful. It is not an accident.

What specially impressed me was the garden party given in the Presidential Palace. It was given on November 8 before the opening of GANEFO. My father gave it especially in honor of the guests to GANEFO and to enhance its atmosphere.

Invited to the party were ministers of the Government, leading members of the GANEFO Organizing Committee and leaders of political parties. Before the garden party he received heads of delegations of Korea, China, Vietnam and many other countries. My father declared the party open and Korean artists gave a performance.

Following a female chorus a male singer sang the Indonesian song *Singsingso* to the applause of the audience. The bass singer's song was so attractive that he had to sing twice and thrice according to the demand of the audience. Each time he finished his song my father clapped his hands first. One of Indonesian famous singers sang a Korean folk song well causing sensation.

After the performance was over, the head of the Korean delegation conveyed the greetings and gift sent by President Kim Il Sung to my father. My father wished President Kim Il Sung good health and requested the delegation head to convey to him the greetings of his own and the Indonesian people.

Eventually, pleasant waltz was struck up and sportspersons and artists of the delegations of many countries danced hand in hand. High-ranking leaders of Indonesia and personages of GANEFO also joined them.

My father joined the dance taking hand of a woman

artist of the Korean art troupe. A man of sentiment, my father loved to dance.

The Korean women participating in the garden party were all brilliant beauties. They were "queens" of society.

My sister, too, danced with Indian students.

The melody of waltz ringing pleasantly and softly under the Southern Cross, gripping the hearts of the people, fascinating view of the garden thick with palms bright with multi-color lamps; the unforgettable garden party was really a significant party of friendship and solidarity promising success of GANEFO warmly linking hearts and hearts.

Various forms of friendly gatherings were also held. One of them was the friendly gathering of the Indonesian and Korean young sportspersons, held in the Senayan International Village.

At last the waited-for GANEFO opened on November 10, 1963. Jakarta citizens in their holiday best thronged Senayan with drums, color pennants and bouquets. The opening ceremony of the first GANEFO was held at the Bung Karno Stadium of Senayan. The stadium was packed with upwards of 100,000 people and so many people gathered outside.

Flags of Indonesia and other participating countries were flying and seen at all places were slogans and placards reading; "GANEFO is games against imperialism and colonialism", "GANEFO will strengthen the unity of the New Emerging Force" "we will advance, not retreat".

At 4 in the afternoon, President Soekarno, high-ranking government leaders, heads of different parties and delegation

heads of many countries took the platform.

Present at the opening ceremony were more than 2,000 sportspersons representing 43 countries and regions and hundreds of artists of many countries. Of the 51 countries that applied for the participation delegations of 8 countries were late because of transport problem and failed to participate in the opening ceremony, but their flags were included in the march of sportspersons.

The Korean delegation was the largest one next to the Chinese.

Led by the red-and-blue flag of the DPRK, the Korean sports team began to march, when the stadium packed with 100,000 people shook with deafening applause and cheers.

The Korean sports team led by sportswomen in beautiful national costume stopped before the platform and acknowledged the cheers of spectators.

The moment 100,000 spectators rose up and welcomed the Korean sports team with more thunderous cheers. My father also rose and enthusiastically waved his hand in acknowledgement.

After the march the sportspersons stood in lines and Minister of Sports Maladi made a speech. He, in the name of 100 million Indonesian people, warmly congratulated over 2,700 sportspersons and artists present at the opening ceremony and said GANEFO is a revolution in sports and continued: "Our slogan is only advance, not retreat. In the future let us pay attention to the Second, Third and Fourth GANEFO."

His speech reminded me of a part of my father's speech before.

"Our slogan is to hold GANEFO with success, and continue to advance, never retreating... Indonesia will continue to struggle against imperialism and colonialism. But on the other hand, it will promote friendship with all new emerging forces."

Maladi's speech represented the idea of the President. My father solemnly declared the First GANEFO open. 21-gun salute boomed and multi-color balloons and thousands of doves flew into the sky. Military band struck up the "Song of GANEFO" and the GANEFO flag was hoisted. One of our beloved sportsmen ran into the stadium with GANEFO flame and kindled the torch. While the torch was flaring up, resolutions of sportspersons of different countries was read out and various dances and mass gymnastics followed.

The 3- hour opening ceremony was a clear demonstration of the friendship and solidarity of the new-emerging nations.

In the Days of Grand Festival

President Kim Il Sung and the Flower of GANEFO, Sin Gum Dan

Many events of the games started on November 11.1963, the day after the grand opening ceremony. Korean sportspersons distinguished themselves from the first-day games, focusing attention. The first target of attention was

the Korean "Red Lightning" Sin Gum Dan, the female runner of Korea, already known to Indonesia.

It was not an accident that Indonesian media, reporting of the arrival of the Korean sports team, specially stressed that the Korean team had Sin Kum Dan. Really a surprising event happened.

In the first-day games on the 11th Sin Kum Dan came out to the 200-metre running course. It reversed the expectation of the experts and fans. Because she was known as a runner for 400-metre and 800-metre race. If she runs 200-meters, it would decisively affect her records in 400-metre and 800-metre races.

But such apprehension was not necessary. She came first in the 200-metre race and became the first to hoist the flag of her country in the sky of Jakarta. She breasted the finish tape ten meters ahead of the Chinese runner who came second, and won the first gold medal.

Probably encouraged by the success of Sin Kum Dan, the first–day successes of the Korean sportspersons were surprising. That day there was men's 100-kilometre team bicycle event on the new road in the suburbs of Jakarta. 44 cyclists from 11 countries completed and Korean cyclists came second after Indonesians and Chinese third. Korean girl took third place in the women's shot put.

Korean footballers defeated Somali team 14: 0 and Korean men volleyballers defeated Lao team, and Korean women volleyballers the Czechoslovak team 3:0 respectively.

Next day on the 12th Sin Kum Dan shortened former

record by 2 seconds and broke the world record again to the surprise of all people.

On the 13th she shortened her record by 0.5 second in the 400-metre race and broke the world record again, which was a miracle. Her successes were a surprise to all.

AFP reported that "the sensation in the field and track has been undoubtedly focused on the north Korean runner Sin Kum Dan, the fastest woman in the 400-metre and 800-metre races and described her as "3-crown Queen in the field and track"

Dominican delegate Jose Maliquis visited the lodgings of the Korean team and proudly said:

"Western newspapers like to write that the East is lagging behind the West. But whatever they may say, the stark reality that Korean Sin Kum Dan is world record holder suffices to shatter all the accusations of the western media. We are of the East and proud of Sin Kum Dan."

Indonesian *Antara News Agency* reported:

"Sin Kum Dan not only increased the prestige of her country but also put the First Games of the New-Emerging Forces on the international sports arena."

Accordingly, the First GANEFO demonstrated to the world the power of the new-emerging forces which neutralize old forces in all fields.

Runner Sin Kum Dan, congratulations!

Korea, run!

GANEFO, forcefully forward!"

Such responses show well what a great contribution Korean runner Sin Kum Dan made to the success of GANEFO.

Then what kind of woman is Korean runner Sin Kum Dan? What made her mount the highest possible echelon as a sportswoman?

To say conclusion first, it is entirely thanks to the great father of the Korean people President Kim Il Sung.

Sin Kum Dan said to the one Indonesian newspaper:

"I was a lathe-operator at a local machine factory. One year the factory organized sports games in which I came first in 100-metre and 400-metre races. Known as a good runner on the occasion, I took part in the inter-factory games held in the province and national games. The mother Party the Workers' Party oft Korea, valuing my small talent, ensured that I can run at a national sports team.

…

I came first in the 400-metre and 800-metre races of GANEFO and on the awarding platform, shed tears, seeing the flag of the Republic, reporters asked me why.

Probably they cannot understand all.

At the moment, I saw kind-hearted fatherly leader Kim Il Sung in my mind's eyes.

Without his warm care that brought me, an ordinary lathe operator as a merited sportswoman, as a world record holder, how could I become a field and truck champion the world Knows."

Yes, she was an ordinary lathe operator at a local factory. Even though she had gifted talent and physical preparation, she could not have become the "Queen" of the world women's field and track apart from the care that found and developed them.

Of course, inborn talent and physical preparation are important to sportspersons. But what is more important is the explosion of spiritual strength. Miracle is wrought when gifted talent and physical strength are accompanied by strength of spirit.

Sports activities of Sin Kum Dan eloquently show it.

This happened at the International Athletic Games for Znamenski Brothers Prize held in Moscow of Russia in July 1961. Sin Kum Dan arrived in Moscow for the games, but after participating in the first-day games, had a fever and found herself in sickbed. The illness did not turn for the better.

All were at a loss what to do, when an official of the Korean Embassy in the Soviet Union visited her.

"Comrade Sin, the leader on a visit to the Soviet Union, leaving for Kiev for local tour, wished you nice success in the current games…"

The official said he told them to inform him of the result of the games immediately.

The touching words loaded with great expectation and trust prompted Sin Kum Dan to jump out of the bed and go out to the stadium.

Her fever did not go down yet.

She stood on the starting line, and her runway appeared

to be several. But she felt fresh strength rising in her arms and legs, feeling the President kindly pushing her back. So that day she finished first with rivals lagging far behind.

Concerning it the Soviet newspaper Izbestiya wrote: "Runner Sin Kum Dan was `Red lightning` that swept the world runway. The world was amazed by the *Chollima* speed of Korea."

Her victory was a result of encouragement and kind push of President Kim Il Sung.

But he did not forget that she overcame difficulty with strong will and demonstrated the honour of the country and spoke highly of her on every possible opportunity.

Before the Korean sports team's departure for Jakarta, he met the sportspersons and warmly encouraged them, saying they must display strong will in the games and, to do so, should emulate Sin Kum Dan.

He added: The comrades present here must display a strong will in the games as Sin Kum Dan.

Encouraged by such warm love and trust, Sin Kum Dan broke two world records and bagged three gold medals, which was a miracle of GANEFO.

A gold medal to Egypt, honour to Korea

President Kim Il Sung who attached importance to sports and GANEFO was more pleased than anybody else over the brilliant successes of the Korean sportspersons from the first-day games.

Receiving a report of the first-day success, next day

he sent a message of greetings to the sportspersons of the Korean team and the artists of the Pyongyang Song and Dance Troupe.

Jakarta.
November 12. 1963

To the sportspersons and artists participating in the First Games of the New-Emerging Forces,

I, together with the entire people of our country, am greatly rejoiced over and warmly congratulate that in the First Games of The New-Emerging Forces, you have achieved excellent successes from the first-day games and contest and demonstrate the honour of the country and people.

I believe that you will make greater effo ts in the future and give full play to the talents of the Korean people in the Chollima era in all events of sports and art performance and thus render great services to the friendship of the peoples of the new-emerging nations and to the success of the current games.
Wishing you health,

Kim Il Sung

It is not surprising that the Korean sportspersons so encouraged by their leader wrought wonders. As far as I know, heads of state of any other countries did not send inspiring messages to the sportspersons of their countries.

Why would the Korean sportspersons not run fast?

It was on the day they received the congratulatory

message of the President that Sin Kum Dan, who broke world record in 800-metre race on the previous day, broke another world record in 400-metre race. She received the kind congratulatory message on the morning of the 13th and that afternoon participated in the race. Sin Kum Dan is said to have spoken before running:

"Today we have received the congratulatory message sent by the fatherly leader!"

Her short speech represented her resolve. After running, she told surrounding reporters:

"In view of my record yesterday and my record in the preliminary, I realized that my condition was good. Especially when our team received the encouraging congratulatory message from the fatherly leader this morning, I renewed my resolve to break world record. I am pleased that I broke the world record to the expectation of the fatherly leader and the Party."

That day newspapers carried many special articles congratulating her on her success including the article titled: "Winged horse of Korea… Sin Kum Dan" illustrated with her pictures wearing the third gold medal, shedding tears, looking up at the flag of the DPRK hoisted high into the sky to the strains of the anthem of Korea. Still vivid in my eyes are our sisters who expressed admiration, seeing her pictures.

My father was also greatly excited and said: "She is the `red

lightning` sent to me by His Excellency Premier Kim Il Sung."

Because of Sin Kum Dan, a new tropical hot wind, "Korean Hot wind" blew Jakarta. All people admired the successes of the Korean sportspersons.

Following Sin Kum Dan, 56-kilogram weightlifter Ri Hong Chon jerked 141 kilograms, breaking world record. It is 0.5 kilogram more than his record (140.5kg) in the weightlifting games in Moscow in March that year, 1.5 kilogram more than the record of the Chinese weightlifter Chen Jingkai.

"What made you break the world record?"

Asked in the interview with the Indonesian newspaper Jakarta Times, he said:

"It is our leader who brought me up, in a small rural village in the north western part of our country, into a signified weightlifter. Now my heart is swelling with the thought that I can make a report of victory to him with an honourable gold medal."

Other sportspersons of Korea also won one victory after another. Jon Man Hung finished first in marathon, Kim An Hong and Jo Won Gak in judo bagged gold medals. Many others received gold medals and many more silver and bronze medals. Korean athletes unanimously said all their successes were aimed at doing justice to the love and trust of President Kim Il Sung.

Kim An Hong who received a gold medal in 80 kg Judo on the morning of the 12th said: "The moment when my arm was in danger of break, I thought of the fatherly leader who, sending us off, requested us to fight like defenders of

Height 1211. His words crossed my head like lightning."

It is said that at that time President Kim Il Sung shook hands with each of them, saying, Take care of you. I believe that whenever in difficulty, you would fight like combatants of Height 1211 and come home after demonstrating the honour of the Korea.

His request to fight like combatants of Height 1211 carried deep meaning that inspired the Korean sportspersons to make strenuous efforts. The height is called Height 1211 as it is 1211 metres above the sea level. It was widely known as "Height of heroes" during the past Fatherland Liberation War when the Korean people fought a bloody struggle against the United States.

The height standing in the eastern sector of the front was of great strategic significance. If the height is given to the enemy, the People's Army would lose a vast area, retreat tens of kilometres and lose strategic initiative. That is why President Kim Il Sung issued order of the Supreme Commander to defend Height 1211 at the risk of the lives.

The U.S. imperialist aggressors made desperate efforts, pouring 30,000-40,000 shells every day in an attempt to seize the height and take strategic initiative in the war. The height completely changed in a few days. Hundreds of years old thick trees were rooted out and rocks were broken to sands. Virgin forest disappeared, the height was denuded and peaks lowered, changing the layout of the land.

On the burning height the soldiers of the People's Army heroically fought at the risk of their lives to carry out the

order of the Supreme Commander. A hero blocked the enemy's gun muzzle with his body and a soldier linked a cut communication cable with his body.

A hero erected mortar almost vertically and moved down enemy soldiers 4.5 metres ahead, and a hero threw himself into the enemy soldiers with a bundle of hand grenades. While some soldiers were fighting, throwing back the hand grenades thrown by the enemy on one hand, others rolled down rocks on the enemy, on the other, singing the "Song of General Kim Il Sung".

In more than one month-long battle, the People's Army put more than 29,000 enemy troops out of action, and destroyed and captured large quantities of military equipment including more than 40 airplanes and over 60 tanks.

Since then the enemy called the height "*Sangsimryong*" or "Heart-breaking Pass" as a mere sight of it made them heartbreaking and the valley before it "*Hamjonggol*" or "Trap valley" as they could not come out of it alive once they entered it. The Korean people and the world progressive people spoke highly of the defenders of the height, calling it "height of heroes".

President Kim Il Sung wished Korean sportspersons would fight like them in the games and showed warm love to them. After giving them valuable instructions he asked whether they have a doctor and told them to take more doctors and more and better medicines. Saying in foreign country they might want to eat national food, he told them to bring rice and peppered bean paste, and took kind measures for them

to arrive at the destination before the games to take a rest and be accustomed to the weather of the country as some people might be seasick. He also told them what to do to avoid heatstroke and what clothes to wear.

That day he specially stressed the need to be modest, organized and orderly in action, in other words, show nice virtues in games. As a result, strong will and excellent virtues in games were a motto of the Korean sportspersons, which was fully displayed during the whole GANEFO.

What was especially memorable was the football final between the Korean team and the Egyptian team. That day the stadium was packed with 125,000 plus spectators and my father and other high-ranking officials of the government were present. They came to see the match of the Korean team which had defeated the Somali team 14:0 in the first-day match, creating a myth of GANEFO that "rain of goals fell in the stadium", defeated the Indonesian team 5:1 in the semi-quarters, and the Vietnamese team 2:0. Until that time Korean footballers got 26 goals and lost 2 goals which were very surprising.

Korean footballers entered the stadium, when the spectators chanted: "Hidup Korea!"

Korean boys waved their hands with a smile in acknowledgement of our cheers. Eventually the game began. It was fierce from the beginning. The technically weak Egyptian team was violent from the outset.

Korean boys were wounded one after another.

They were carried out on stretchers, but returned. A

boy ran and ran with wounded leg, and another boy with wounded mouth returned to the stadium, saying he could run better that the man with wounded leg. Another footballer encouraged his colleagues, saying: "Let's win though we have to leave a leg behind in Jakarta!"

I was moved to tears to see their game.

More than 100,000 spectators cheered only Korean team, chanting: "Korea! Korea!"

In his impressions carried in the *Suluh Indonesia*, a sport fan of Jakarta wrote: "I was moved to tears to see a seriously wounded Korean footballer coming out to the stadium again soon, his leg limping. What gave him such strength? I have clearly seen what the sportspersons under socialism are like."

The football game ended in draw of 1:1. There was lottery according to the demand of the spectators. As a result of the lottery the Egyptian team won. But Jakarta citizens did not recognize the defeat of the Korean team.

Under the title: "Korean team with high technique and noble virtues conceded in lottery, and the Egyptian team with low technique and undesirable character won in the lottery", an Indonesian newspaper wrote:

"More than 100,000 Indonesian spectators enjoyed an excellent football game at the Senayan Central Stadium where footballers handled the ball with high technique. At the same time they saw noble sports morality and mean acts.

Driven into a tight corner by the well-organized Korean team absolutely superior in short-distance pass and jumping,

the angry Egyptian team felt shame and began to commit unpardonable violent acts.

Korean team kicked to the goal 23 times, but the Egyptian team only 9 times. But the match regrettably ended in draw 1:1. There was lottery according to the decision of the spectators. According to the lottery Korea with high technique and good manners lost and Egypt with low technique and bad manners won."

A reporter of another newspaper wrote: "Korea won 2:0, one goal with technique and another with morality."

The Indonesian newspaper *Suluh Indonesia* ran an article under the title: "Egyptian team, first, Korean team, winner recognized by the majority."

The newspaper *Pos Kota* simplified all of them and commented: "Egyptian Team got gold medal, Korean team honour!"

The victory of the Korean sportspersons sent by President Kim Il Sung was the victory of him.

I would like to say the services of the Korean sports team to the success of GANEFO were those of President Kim Il Sung.

"Gold Art" of Chollima Korea

"Gold art" of *Chollima* Korea decorated GANEFO in a unique way. At that time Korean art was already well known to Indonesia. That is why the Indonesian media gave wide publicity to the Korean Pyongyang Song and Dance Troupe every day from the first day of GANEFO.

A newspaper wrote:

"Pyongyang-- this city is known as a city of heroes of the land of morning calm Korea. Ten years ago when those with atom bomb in one hand and dollars in the other were disgracefully blowing a gust of frenzy towards the whole world, this walled city experienced rigorous trials in flames and storm.

In the trying days when almost all people were believed to be dead under the hail of tens of thousand tons of bombs of the vicious invaders, the walled city resolutely rose up, symbolizing the invincibility and uncommon bravery of the Korean people.

Today the Song and Dance Troupe of Korea, this beautiful heavenly country has come to Indonesia. The Song and Dance Troupe is named after the city."

All Indonesians were full of expectation and hope that the art troupe representing the wisdom and talents of the Korean people would show them "Gold art" they were so earnestly waiting for.

Our expectation was not vain.

The Pyongyang Song and Dance Troupe were warmly applauded since its first performance at the "Megaria" Cinema House in downtown Jakarta.

The newspapers commented that the audience was all mesmerized from the first performance.

I saw the performance of the Troupe at the "Lokasari" Hall in the busiest street of Jakarta.

Of course, I saw the performance of the Korean artists at the garden party in the Presidential Palace, but part of it at that time.

Before performance Deputy Mayor of Jakarta Henk Ngantung made a speech. He said: "The Indonesian people are warmly welcoming the Korean art troupe."

And continued: "Your performance has completely gripped the hearts of the Indonesian people. You will be welcomed everywhere you go in our country. You are making a great contribution to the success of GANEFO."

Then the performance started. The first item was the chorus "Let's go to the mountains and sea".

I did not know the words, but was carried away by its melody, an indescribable fascination, feeling as if I were going out to an endless expanse of beautiful sea, rowing a canoe, or walking through exquisite woods thick with tropical jungle. I renew the emotion of the day, writing here the words of the excellent song.

Let's go to the sea, let's go to the sea,
Let's go to the sea
Beautiful with white sails.
White birds flying on the wa es.
We, let's go to the sea.
Birds are flying on hills and plain
Everywhere we go
O, our sky is beautiful.

Let's go to the mountains, let's go to the mountains
Let's go to the mountains
With clear water rolling on the rock
Birds and wind heard to our hearts.
We, let's go to mountains

What an excellent song it is. It was a really beautiful song with rich emotion representing ardent love for the scenic mountains and sea, for the sky and plains of their country.

The Korean artists sang Indonesian songs also well. Not only the *Singsingso* of the singer who sang at the garden party, but also the "Madetek Margambiri" sung by Korean women in beautiful voice, while playing the Korean national instrument *Kayagum*, enjoyed warm applause.

People said Korean singers sang Indonesian songs better than Indonesians and a woman singer said she knew now how she should sing Indonesian song.

Dances were also admired. After seeing the Korean folk dance *Sorceress Dance*, an Indonesian dancer said: "I am just fascinated whenever I see the dance. I cannot find other words." A young man who appreciated the male group dancer "Molten Iron Flows" praised it, saying: "The dance is an art beyond human imagination."

I was also charmed at the dance. The graceful dance representing molten iron pouring out of the furnace, enthusiastic furnace-men, well-balanced composition, unique dance movements, red costumes like molten iron and emphatic dance music--all things were perfect and excellent.

The unimaginable charming performance of the Korean artists reversed the anticipation of the sponsors. The imperialists and their hirelings attempted to abort the art festival of GANEFO and reduce it to an entertainment because of their dirty plot the performance sponsors restricted the art troupes of different countries to give independent performance only once and to perform only 15~20 minutes during joint performances. But from the first performance, the "regulations" were ignored.

From the first joint performance, Korean artists had to repeat almost all items twice, thrice and even five times, prolonging their time of 15~20 minutes to 50 minutes.

They "violated" the regulations of independent performance, extending their time even 14 times.

During their performance before 25,000 dockers, seeing the dance "Melton Iron Flows", the workers chanted: "Long live Korean working class!", and seeing the folk dance "Peasant Dance", chanted "Long live Korean peasants!"

It suffices to show what a great sensation the Korean art troupe sent by President Kim Il Sung, caused.

High-ranking politicians too expressed great admiration.

Soepardo, Deputy Minister of Education, who saw the first performance of the Korean art troupe at the Megaria Cinema House, said: "The Korean art is taking a special position now in Jakarta. … Our people are eagerly waiting for your art troupe to perform in different ports of our country. It will be difficult for you to go home soon."

His words represented the unanimous feelings of the

Indonesian people. We can know it well also through the fact that the Governor of East Java Province dispatched 17-member delegation to request the Korean art troupe to come and perform in the region under his jurisdiction.

Art lovers gathered in Jakarta from different parts of Indonesia. Among them was a 60-year old man from far-off Medan of Sumatra.

After appreciating the performance of the Koran artists, he said: "I have come after hearing that Korean art is excellent. But I did not think that I could see so excellent a performance. In my 60-year long life I have seen so truthful and an excellent art for the first time. I would like to request you to come to Medan and perform for our old people."

Listening to him, a poet said: "From olden times, Medan was known as a place with high musical level. But I think the musicians of Medan should learn a lot from Korean chorus."

Needless to say the old man absolutely agreed with him.

The performance of the Koran artists evoked great reflection also among foreign diplomatic envoys in Jakarta.

A diplomat said: "I served as diplomat for four years in London and four years in Paris, but I have never seen so marvellous art as the Korean art."

In conclusion, I would like to quote the Jakarta newspaper *Pos Kota* on the performance of the Korean art performance, as saying:

"The delegation of Korea, a country of heroes, shows good successes in the Games of New-Emerging Forces and

at the same time gives deep impressions in culture and art... After giving performances at the port of Jakarta, Presidential Palace and theatres several times more, the Pyongyang Song and Dance Troupe will start local performance tour to realize the ardent desire of the people in different parts of Indonesia."

GANEFO Closed in Pyongyang

GANEFO was not a simple athletic meet for competition. It was a great festival of the friends where the spirit of friendship and unity and solidarity erupted like the volcano of our Indonesia. After competitions at the Stadium, there were significant meetings every day.

The lodgings of the Korean delegation well-known for excellent successes in the games and art performance were alive with visitors every day. On the evening of the 16th, sportspersons of Korea and more than 60 from Egypt, Cambodia, Iraq, Syria, Morocco and Afghanistan met at the Korean lodgings.

Though they were different in colour and language, they had no obstacles in understanding and communication as they were united with one idea against imperialism and colonialism.

The guests hugged Korean friends and did not let go the clenched hands chanting: "*Chollima* Sin Kum Dan" and "Ri Hong Chon--Korea".

The significant gathering proceeded without any ceremony, as if old acquaintances met after a long separation

and they loudly chorused "Song of GANEFO" and "Halo Halo Bandung".

Tunisian sportspersons pleased all present with enthusiastic African dance. A young African showed his thumb to Sin Kum Dan and waved his two arms like winged horse *Chollima*, evoking a hearty laughter.

Korean Ri Hong Chon who had finished first in 56 kg weightlifting and Egyptian Mohammed Ali Nam who won silver medal sang the Korean song "*Arirang*" well together.

A black young man, unable to control his excitement, shouted "Down with imperialism and colonialism!"

He was a Tunisian runner who took third place in the 10,000-metre race.

All raised fists and followed him.

"Down with imperialism!"

"Down with colonialism!"

Thunderous cries rang far and wide into the night sky of Jakarta.

The next day more than 80 youngsters of Cuba, Uruguay, Mexico, Bolivia, Chile, Dominica and other countries visited the Korean lodgings.

They sang and danced and drank to each other's success and friendship.

Before saying goodbye, all of them sang the "Song of General Kim Il Sung" shoulder to shoulder. Those who could not learn the song clapped hands, keeping time with the song. 15-member Indonesian Youth and Students Delegation also visited the lodgings of the Korean team.

A delegate said the victory of the Korean sportspersons was the victory of the Indonesian people and at the same time the victory of the peoples of the new-emerging nations and such successes compelled the imperialists and colonialists to open their eyes and see the invincibility of the new-emerging forces.

The days of GANEFO flew fast and came to an end. Grand closing ceremony was held at the Bung Karno Stadium in Jakarta on November 22. 1963, declaring the successful conclusion of the First Games of the New-Emerging Forces which was a great demonstration of the firm friendship and solidarity of the new-emerging forces against imperialism and colonialism.

Present at the closing ceremony were my father, high-ranking Indonesian political and public personages, heads of the delegations of different countries and foreign diplomatic representatives. Sportspersons from 49 countries lined up in the stadium with flags of the countries. Upwards of 100,000 spectators warmly welcomed them.

Koreans led by red and blue flag with a five-pointed star entered, when all spectators enthusiastically chanted "Long live Korea!" and "Sin Kum Dan! Sin Kum Dan!"

Minister of Sports Maladi made a speech concerning the close of the games and my father President solemnly declared the games closed. He said GANEFO demonstrated the superiority of the new-emerging forces to all old forces.

To the strains of a military band, the GANEFO flag slowly came down, balloons were released and bearers of

torches entered the stadium, unfolding a sea of flames for celebration. Gifts were presented to the sportspersons and at last the curtain was lowered, while more than 100,000 spectators were singing *Song of Farewell*.

The Games included ever 20 items including field and track, football, basketball, volleyball, boxing and judo. Games proceeded in good order in an atmosphere of friendship and solidarity from beginning to end, and 5 world records were broken, of which 3 by Koreans.

Sin Kum Dan broke world records in 400-metre and 800-metre races, and Ri Hong Chon in jerk of 56-kg weightlifting. The other two were broken by Chinese sportspersons in 30-metre archery and in snatch of 56 kg weightlifting.

It showed that GANEFO virtually took its position as a great international sports festival. GANEFO was followed by GANEFO General Meeting and its charter was adopted and communiqué made public.

The communiqué highly appreciated and thanked Dr. Soekarno, President of the Republic of Indonesia, for the great success of the First Games of New-Emerging Forces achieved thanks to the efforts of the Indonesian government.

It pointed out that he was awarded the title of the "Founder of GANEFO" and "Honorary Chairman".

A grand mass meeting was held at the Bung Karno Sports Palace in Jakarta on November 25 with the attendance of nearly 20,000 people in congratulation of the success of the First GANEFO.

Addressing the meeting, my father said the imperialists and colonialists and their stooges, the old forces of the world, attempt to maintain the old world, but the new-emerging forces were further expanded and strengthened and the new-emerging forces must build a world of peace and happiness, a new world without imperialism and colonialism.

He stressed: "We must not step back, but advance. The new-emerging forces must unite. I hope that we would convene the 2nd and 3rd Conference of Asian and African Nations Conference of Asian, African and Latin American Nations and conference of the new-emerging forces.

We must more firmly unite not only politically but also in the field of sports."

Heads of delegations of many countries made speeches. In his speech, the head of the Korean delegation said: The GANEFO the first of its kind in the world took its first step with its charter based on a noble idea. The victory of the First GANEFO is a new milestone in the history of the development of the new-emerging forces, and a great victory of the new-emerging in forces over imperialism and colonialism and all other forms of old forces. We have crossed rugged and steep passes before we won this victory. The plots of those who did not like GANEFO have already been destroyed.

Next evening a soiree was held in honour of the delegates to the First GANEFO conference.

On December 1, my father had a special meeting with

the members of the Korean, Chinese and Vietnamese delegations.

My father said: "The complete victory of the First Games of New-Emerging Forces was possible because of the active support of the peoples of Korea, China, Viet Nam and other new-emerging forces."

He continued: "In order to build a new world liberated from imperialism and colonialism, we should promote the unity of the people of the whole world. We are uniting the new-emerging forces on a worldwide scale, and have already united them in the field of sports and held the Games of the New-Emerging Forces. The games have represented the desire of the peoples of the new-emerging forces for unity. Let us advance on the basis of the unity."

He was pleased to know that the heads of the Korean, Chinese and Vietnamese sports troupes would meet the delegate of West Irian that had been returned to Indonesia in May that year.

My father said such a meeting was made possible because West Irian was liberated. In the struggle to liberate West Irian the Indonesian people enjoyed the active support of the peoples of Korea, China and Viet Nam. From the beginning, the struggle of the Indonesian people to liberate West Irian was closely linked with the struggle of the world people against imperialism.

He dwelt on the historic victory of GANEFO and

scathingly denounced the United States for its malignant slanders. He said there was a genuine spokesman for the people in history, and asked:

"Who is the spokesman for the Korean people?"

All those present chorused; "Premier Kim Il Sung."

My father passionately said: "Right. Let all of us chant 'Long live Premier Kim Il Sung!'" and led the chant, holding high his two hands.

The venue of the meeting shook with cheers of "Long live Premier Kim Il Sung!"

The meeting took place at the Bogor Palace. Friendly chat proceeded in a cordial atmosphere and was followed by an art performance and dinner.

During the dinner, too, my father paid special attention to the Korean guests and said with interest that the issues of food, clothing and housing have been resolved in Korea, tractors and lorries are produced at home and hard worker can become a rider of the winged horse *Chollima*.

When guests were leaving after the meeting, my father took the Korean guests to a spacious hall and spent a meaningful time, singing and dancing together with them.

Upon departure, the Korean guests saw off my father and our family, singing the Indonesian folk song "Song of Farewell".

My father headed for the car, waving goodbye, but returned, took hand of the head the Korean delegation and repeatedly requested: "Please convey my sincere greetings to His Excellency Premier Kim Il Sung. So the Korean delegation returned home with his best wishes sent to Kim Il Sung.

Great honour was waiting for them at home.

On December 21.1963 President Kim Il Sung received the members of the Korean delegation.

He gave a grand reception in honour of the Korean sportspersons and artists who had come back from GANEFO and made a congratulatory speech.

In his speech at the reception, he said you have achieved really excellent successes either in sports games and art performance in GANEFO.

He highly praised them, saying: "You are victors who have fully demonstrated the dignity and prestige of our Republic to the world in the eyes of the peoples of many new-emerging nations."

He said our participation in the first GANEFO was a praiseworthy one.

"GANEFO can be said to be not only a sports festival but also an art festival to promote friendship and solidarity of the peoples and sportspersons of the new-emerging countries who have taken the road of new development after liberation from the imperialist oppression of the past.

The First FANEFO was a very great international event participated in by tens of countries from many continents of the world."

As an international event of large scale with the attendance of 49 countries representing 70 per cent population of the world, GANEFO was a proud great sports festival of world standard which broke 5 records of the world and an

excellent art festival where well-known art organisations of many countries gave performances.

President Kim Il Sung made clear such international character and position of GANEFO and thus greatly pleased my father and the Indonesian people who had proposed and hosted GANEFO, and contributed the strengthening of the solidarity of the peoples of the new-emerging nations.

Learning that President Kim Il Sung received the Korean sportspersons coming back after achieving great successes at GANEFO and highly appreciated it, my father said his speech was the conclusion and summary of GANEFO.

As aforesaid, GANEFO further deepened the mutual respect and understanding , unity and cooperation, friendship and fraternity between my father, President of the Republic of Indonesia and His Excellent President Kim Il Sung, the great leader of the Korean people and rapidly strengthened and developed the friendly and cooperative relations between the two countries.

The torch of GANEFO died out, but its contribution to the friendship and solidarity of the peoples of the new-emerging countries has been clearly recorded in the history.

III

SOEKARNO TO PYONGYANG

Brief Review of Indonesia-Korea Relations

As mentioned in brief before, Indonesia and Korea were in the same position, won independence through their struggle with the conclusion of World War Two and declared the founding of the Republic respectively.

But the two countries could not get in contact with each other soon. Korea was at war in the early 1950s and after the war, had to concentrate efforts on reconstruction. Though the two countries had not official relations, the opportunity of development of relations\ was expanded as days went.

The International Round-Table Conference on Indonesia held that time left a problem to Indonesia. Indonesia needed international support in the struggle to liberate West Irian (present Papua) which was under the occupation of the Netherlands that time.

Such an anti-imperialist and anti-colonialist stand of

Indonesia served as the basis of the establishment of relations with the DPRK. Korea's first delegation to Indonesia participated in the Afro-Asian Conference held in Bandung in 1955 as observer.

What is interesting is that Indonesian's first delegation to Korea was neither politicians, state officials nor military leaders, but a youth delegation that had participated in the World Festival of Youth and Students held in Moscow in 1957. One of the delegation members was well-known singer Gordon Tobing who sang the Indonesian song "Singsing So" before the Korean spectators.

The young people who visited Korea came back with a touching story. They said they had seen remains of the buildings devastated by US bombs in Pyongyang. They said the United States clamored that Korea would not rise up even after 100 years. Their story prompted the Indonesian people to know more about Korea, that is, about the Korean War and how the Korean people will build their country again.

The visit of the Indonesian youth delegation exerted an affirmative influence on the organization of the DPRK-Indonesia Friendship Association in Korea on November 10, 1958. Some time later, the Indonesia-Korea Friendship Association was founded in Indonesia.

The next year, Anwar Nasution, a reporter of the Indonesian newspaper *Suara Merdeka*, visited Pyongyang. He visited many construction sites, cultural remains and scenic spots and contributed an account of his visit to the newspaper and later wrote the book "New Korea". The book

was very useful to the readers of Indonesia who wanted to know about the DPRK. Hitherto there were no official relations between the two countries. But that year Korea established its trade mission in Jakarta. The mission ensured convenience to the Indonesian delegations visiting Korea.

The first official delegation of Indonesia to Pyongyang was an art troupe led by Muliyanto of the Ministry of Foreign Affairs. During the visit the delegation could hold a ceremony on the Day of Youth Oath October 8 with the help of Korean friends. Foreign students in Pyongyang also took part in the ceremony. It was an opportunity that showed the will of the peoples of their countries to promote friendship with Indonesia. Sports delegation also visited Pyongyang including M. Sarengat, winner of gold medal in 100-metre race in the Asian Games in 1962. Basketball team and football team also visited Korea and had friendly game.

At that time, in 1961, my father made public a political statement that the Indonesian people must rely on themselves. It had something in common with slogan of self-reliance raised by the Korean people. For the similarity of their aspirations, the relations between the two countries further developed.

In June that year, that is 1961, a Korean trade and friendship delegation led by Ri Ju Yon, vice-premier and minister of Foreign Trade visited Indonesia. During the visit a protocol on establishing consul general level relations was signed between the two countries and later the Korean side promoted the Mission of Trade to Consulate General.

In December 1963 Indonesia established Consulate General in Pyongyang and appointed Yusuf Consul General.

An epochal opportunity in the development of relations of Indonesia-Korea friendship was my father's friendly visit to the DPRK in November 1964.

Earlier, during his visit to Beijing in 1961, my father expressed his intention to visit Korea. My father is said to have learned about the airlines and train course to Pyongyang. And in 1962, Madame Hartini planned to visit Pyongyang, but unfortunately failed because of reception of the Romanian President and his madame visiting Indonesia.

But when desire is warm there is opportunity. After participating in the Afro-Asian Summit Conference in Cairo, Egypt, my father turned his course to Pyongyang to meet President Kim Il Sung. The air route was from Paris to Tokyo and from Tokyo to Pyongyang. Korea was in hostile relations with Japan, but my father decided to fly from Tokyo to Pyongyang. It was the first of its kind.

On the other hand, the whole of Pyongyang was astir with preparations to receive guests. Pyongyang citizens, youth and students learned such Indonesian songs as Potong Bebek Angsa, Bung Karno Siapa Yang Punya, Rayuan Pulau Kelapa, Halo Halo Bandung, Bongawan Solo, dan Sarinande. 100,000-strong mass gymnastic and a music and dance epic performed by 3,000 artists were being prepared in Pyongyang.

Because of the President's projected visit, the Indonesian

Consulate General in Korea was spending busy time every day. The greatest problem was the lack of personnel. So they had to involve 7 Indonesian students studying in Pyongyang. Still short, 4 students studying in China had to come.

At last the day came when my father was flying to Pyongyang amid the sincere preparations of the host and visitors and amid heated atmosphere.

At Pyongyang Airport

That day the most important Korean newspaper *Rodong Sinmun* ran the poem "*The Motherland*" written by Indonesian poet Sitor Situmorang.

Peaceful construction,
Listen to the cry of millions!
Everyone cries loudly,
Independence, freedom and happiness!
This is the ideal of the people

The people build a f ee world and harmonious family
With the love and strenuous labor
The staunch and honest oung folks
Devote all their life to the country
Like always hardworking bull.

The people a e masters of this land
Motherland is their bosom.
We are children of you, motherland,

Seeds and the nutrients for the motherland
We are greens growing in the flames of evolution
We are diligent bulls on the pleasant fields.

However when the enemies invade our motherland,
We will become furious like wild animals
in the mountains.
When the sun sets and the moon rises,
We will valorously fly like hawks in the sk .
In the morning when tide goes out,
We will rustle like palms on the sand.

Far off and near y
We find e ebrows decorated according to seasons
And pretty faces washed by rain.
This is my mothe land, my Indonesia
Day and night
We will devote our strength
To you.

On November 1, 1964 when the ardent love of the Indonesian people for the motherland was touching the heartstrings of the Pyongyang citizens waiting for the guests, my father, together with a number of high-ranking personages, flew in Pyongyang, the capital of the DPRK, by President's special plane Indonesia No.1 Garuda.

When the special plane entered the sky of Pyongyang, escorted by fighters of the Air Force of the Korean People's

Army, they were informed that President Kim Il Sung, together with the Chairman of the Standing Committee of the Supreme People's Assembly and other high-ranking state officials, was waiting at the airport.

Greatly excited, my father could not tear his eyes from the window of the plane.

Flags were like woods and people in their holiday best waved bouquets towards the plane.

The plane touched down and my father wearing black cap appeared, when cheers burst forth, "Long live Bung Karno!", "Long live great Comrade Kim Il Sung!"

My father walked down the ramp and headed for President Kim Il Sung. President Kim Il Sung also walked towards my father, saying in a resonant voice;

"Welcome to my country."

"Your Excellency respected Premier Kim Il Sung!" my father said.

They warmly hugged each other and firmly shook their hands.

President Kim Il Sung smilingly said;

"It's cold. Please put on overcoat."

My father declined as he alighted without overcoat to greet President Kim Il Sung, but he requested my father repeatedly to put on overcoat, saying the weather was cold.

Retinues came running with his overcoat.

After my father put on overcoat, President Kim Il Sung exchanged greetings with the 2nd Deputy-Prime Minister and others who accompanied my father.

The airport was all decorated in a welcome atmosphere.

Two large balloons were afloat on both sides of the building of the airport, with hanging slogans reading; "Long live the Friendship between the Korean and Indonesian Peoples!" and "You are Welcome, President Soekarno!"

Many people who gathered from early morning shouted hurrah. Portraits of the two leaders were seen at the airport and on their left and right sides slogans and placards reading "Long live President Soekarno!" "Long live Premier Kim Il Sung!" "Warm welcome to President Soekarno!" "Long live the friendship between the peoples of Korea and Indonesia!"

Waving flags of the two countries and bouquets, the crowds chorused the Indonesian song "Who is most honorable" in Indonesian.

Pretty children presented bouquets to my father, national anthems of the two countries were struck up and the two leaders reviewed a guard of honour amid the boom of 21-gun salute.

They exchanged speech. President Kim Il Sung spoke first. His speech excites us today, too. Here I quote his speech.

"Your Excellency respected President Soekarno!

Respected Indonesian guests!

Comrades and friends!

It is with great pleasure that today our people receive President Soekarno, national hero of Indonesia and outstanding internationalist fighter, and your party.

I would like to take this opportunity to wholeheartedly and warmly welcome esteemed Your Excellency President Soekarno and distinguished guests from Indonesia in the name of the Government of the DPRK and all the Korean people.

Your Excellency President!

The noble exploits you performed for the prosperity of Indonesia and world peace are widely known to the world and your active struggle against imperialism and colonialism enjoys great sympathy among the people.

The deep friendly feelings Your Excellency expresses towards our people and your active support to the just struggle of our people encourage us.

This visit of Your Excellency President Soekarno, a close friend of our people, to our country is a great event to our people. You have come to our country with friendly feelings the one hundred million Indonesian people send to the Korean people. It gives infinite pleasure to our people and encourages them.

Our honoured guests will be accorded warm hospitality of our people and clearly feel the love and respect of the Korean people for the Indonesian people and their leader everywhere you go."

President Kim Il Sung said, today the Indonesian people with a long history and glorious tradition are resolutely struggling under the leadership of President Soekarno for the prosperity of their country and stability and peace of

the country under the banner of the anti-imperialist, anti-colonialist struggle, and continued:

"The Korean people fully support the just struggle of the Indonesian people and are sincerely rejoiced over all the successes the Indonesian people are achieving in the struggle. I believe that the current visit of President Soekarno to our country will be a historic contribution to the strengthening of friendship and solidarity of the peoples of Korea and Indonesia and furthermore, render services to the strengthening of the unity of the Asian, African and Latin American peoples under the banner of anti-imperialist independence.

I sincerely wish Your Excellency President and honoured guests of Indonesia would be healthy and spend pleasant days. Long live the Republic of Indonesia! Long live the everlasting friendship and solidarity between the Korean people and Indonesian people! Long live the unity of the Asian, African and Latin American peoples! Long live the unity of the people of the whole world! Long live world peace!"

My father was greatly moved by his ardent speech and enthusiastic welcome of the people. He was one of the Presidents who made longest tours. Some people slandered him. To them my father said:

"I tour in order to make Indonesia widely known. It is to show to the world what kind of country Indonesia is, we

are no longer an "incompetent toad" nation nor the "natives unable to speak though they spit" as the Dutches say, I tour foreign countries to show that our nation is no longer a second-grade nation who used to kowtow with hood around the head as the former colonialists demanded."

My father also said, "Everywhere I go I enjoy applause, luxurious reception and praise. They are to present compliments not to Soekarno, but to my country. In Sweden, the King had a picture taken with me on his left side. In Moscow over 150 instrumentalists welcomed me at the airport, playing the national anthem of Indonesia. I could not hold back tears for pride. In Beijing, they received me with a grand march and gun-salute. I was proud that our once-downtrodden country has become one of big powers."

At the Pyongyang Airport, my father was more excited than ever before. So my father did not read a prepared speech, but showed his special talent.

Follows is my father's speech at the airport.

"Respected Your Excellency Premier Kim Il Sung!

My plane has just touched down in Pyongyang. Now I am very pleased here in Korea.

As you have seen, I alighted from the plane without overcoat, but now I have to wear it. This means it is cold here. But my heart is warm. It is because you have welcomed me very friendly, fraternally and ardently.

Today I have come here not only as the Indonesian President, but also conveyer of the warm greetings sent to you by the Indonesian people struggling against imperialism and for building a prosperous and just new society. I wanted very much to visit your country and meet you since long ago.

My comrades also requested me to visit Korea. For instance, Comrade Ho Chi Minh did so, Comrade Mao Tse-tung did so.

As you know well, Indonesia is waging a fierce struggle together with the progressive forces of the whole world. The Indonesian people desire to unite and to be friendly with the peoples of Asia, Africa and Latin America, and with the peoples of the socialist countries and other progressive people of the whole world.

They are making efforts to organize powerful new forces called new-emerging forces. They are struggling to remove the unjust system, an old system where people can not live pleasantly and where exploitation of man by man exists.

The Indonesian people have long sympathized with and supported the Korean people in their struggle for the reunification of the country.

Long live reunified Korea! Long live Indonesia-Korea friendship! Thank you."

After their speeches stormy cheers burst out once again. Passing by the cheering crowds, the two leaders waved their hands towards them.

Soon they walked forwards the car. Warm welcome at the

airport continued in the streets in city.

From early morning, 200,000 Pyongyang citizens lined up along the long streets to be passed through by the delegation. They chanted "Long live Bung Karno!" "Long live Premier Kim Il Sung!" enthusiastically waving flags of the two countries and bundles of flowers.

The cheers of hurrah shook the whole of Pyongyang.

At the entrance to the city, famous runner Sin Kum Dan who had broken two world records at GANEFO ran towards the car and presented a bouquet to my father who was smiling always for joy.

Welcoming cheers did not stop until the procession of guests arrived at the lodgings.

It was probable that because of the heated atmosphere the formalities for receiving guests could not be well observed. It was not unpleasant to the guests, but became a vivid episode showing how close the hosts and guests were. For example, a man proudly said to my father that he had an Indonesian friend and students of Kim Il Sung University who were studying together with Indonesian students freely broke in the conversation, praising the Indonesian students who had learned Korean in a short time.

The friendly unofficial chats were really impressive along with the songs "Bung Karno Siapa Yang Punya" and "Potong Bebek Angsa" they sang.

Pyongyang citizens did not let the guests pass by without showing hospitality.

My father's car had to stop several times because of

Children's Union members with red scarves around their necks. They raised their hands for Children's Union salute, gave bouquets and expressed welcome, saying; "Welcome to Bung Karno!" in fluent Indonesian.

My father patted them on the head and, they took his hand with pleasure.

Pyongyang was really in a holiday mood.

It was an expression of warm love and friendship of President Kim Il Sung and the entire Korean people towards my father and the Indonesian people.

Significant alk (1)

The first work of my father in Pyongyang was a courtesy call on President Kim Il Sung. Then he participated in the banquet given by President Kim Il Sung in honour of the guests, where speeches were exchanged. In the evening, he appreciated the grand song and dance epic "Our Glorious Fatherland" at the Pyongyang Circus Theatre.

The most important one of the busy and significant schedule of the day was the first historic talks with President Kim Il Sung.

When we see the proceedings of talks between them it seems that they had very trifling and general talks, but when we analyze the contents we can see that they had a profound discussion on very important issues.

The historic proceedings of the talks let us know that both of them were great statesmen and great diplomats.

At the talks my father first made clear his stand to

denounce imperialism that exploits and plunders the developing countries, maintaining the old international economic order. How and in which way? The form of conversation is very interesting.

President Kim Il Sung: Please smoke.

President Soekarno: Thank you.
(Taking a cigarette)
I call this cigarette imperialist cigarette. This cigarette was made with tobacco produced in Indonesia, The British import tobacco produced in Indonesia, make cigarettes with it and export them back to Indonesia.
I do not know what was mixed with it and how it was processed, anyhow it tastes good. Please smoke one. (Offering a cigarette) How about it?

President Kim Il Sung: Good.

President Soekarno: The imperialists import raw materials from other countries, process them and sell them back. Thus they make other country market of their commodities.

And my father expressing admiration at Korea which achieved economic independence and makes everything with its strength and technique, said the venue of the talks was large and excellent, the entrance hall he had seen while coming in was very impressive, it is said that the building he

was staying in had been built for four months, is it true?

President Kim Il Sung said yes, and added that President Soekarno was its first guest and it had been built in an eastern way.

My father said: "In Jakarta, too, there is a house built in eastern way, and the house is waiting for you." And he invited him to Jakarta. My father said, "Your ambassador would know well about the house," and added, "I am waiting for Your Excellency to visit our country in the near future."

President Kim Il Sung thanked him and said he would go and asked when it would be good.

My father asked if he would not go with himself on the forth-coming 4th, and said: "I am going to Shanghai on the forthcoming 4th. I stop over one night and go to Indonesia on the 5th. I hope to meet you again in Jakarta."

It shows how eagerly my father was waiting for President Kim Il Sung to visit to Indonesia. It also shows how much my father respected President Kim Il Sung and how ardent his affection for him was. My father said Modibo Keita would visit Jakarta on coming 8th and talked in detail about his several meetings with him. At the talks the then Malian President Modibo Keita was mentioned, because he had visited Korea a few days before my father went to Pyongyang.

My father asked how long Modibo Keita had stayed in Korea, and said:

"I met Modibo Keita for the first time at the Non-Aligned Summit held in Belgrade. The Non-Aligned Summit decided to send Soekarno and Modibo Keita to Washington and Nehru and Nkurma to Moscow.

Like this, it decided to send delegates of the Non-Aligned Movement to the United States and the Soviet Union to persuade them not to fight each other. I met Modibo Keita also at the Second Non-Aligned Summit."

Thus, the issue of Non-Aligned Movement, the issue of anti-imperialist struggle, to be specific, the issue of the Second Non-Aligned Summit held in Cairo, the capital of Egypt some time before, were discussed at the talks. It was an important international conference to which President Kim Il Sung was paying deep attention.

President Kim Il Sung sent a message of greetings to the Summit, giving joy and confidence to the participants. That is why my father informed him of the Second Non-Aligned Summit in detail.

"The Second Conference of Heads of State of Non-Aligned Nations adopted a resolution against imperialism and colonialism at my proposal.

The Conference also unanimously discussed that peaceful co-existence available only between two powers, and impossible between imperialism and the colonial countries. Though not many, some countries came out in a very compromising direction … But votes for the resolution

proposed by me were more than those supporting them."

President Kim Il Sung was very satisfied with the information of my father and said: "You have done a very good work this time, we think the Second Non-Aligned Summit was a success. It was very progressive.

There Your Excellency President Soekarno made an excellent speech. You made an excellent speech on anti-imperialism and anti-colonialism. You gave a great encouragement. …We have heard all the news about it and thought it was a success."

My father said, "Of course the success is not a success of my own. The success was made by the energetic efforts of 90 percent of the countries participating in the summit conference." and added that the recent Summit was of a larger scale than that of Belgrade.

President Kim Il Sung said it was done well and expressed satisfaction again.

My father replied he believed that President Kim Il Sung would say so, and continued:

"But the newspapers of the imperialist countries carried articles speaking ill of us."

President Kim Il Sung said:

"I also have read them. If the imperialists like it, the Conference is wrong. When the imperialists do not like it the conference can be considered to be successful."

It was wise assessment.

My father admired him and said:

"What Your Excellency Premier said is the philosophy I intended to teach our people. I say if the imperialists support you, you have done bad work, and if the imperialists abuse you, you have done good work."

President Kim Il Sung said it is very nice words and stressed:

"I hope the recent Non-Aligned Summit would be the basis of the future Afro-Asian Summit Conference and the Afro-Asian Summit Conference would be a more developed conference than the recent Non-Aligned Summit. Your Excellency President Soekarno should contribute to making the future Afro-Asian Summit Conference a better conference."

My father agreed with him, and said the projected Afro-Asian Summit is a more important conference and a more important conference than it is the Asian, African and Latin American Summit Conference, which is a conference of the socialist countries and other progressive countries of Asia, Africa and Latin America.

My father continued that GANEFO means the Games of New-Emerging Forces and CONEFO means Conference of New-Emerging Forces, and he was planning to hold the Conference in Indonesia in 1965.

President Kim Il Sung supported it, saying it is nice, and my father said he thought he would also take part in the conference.

President Kim Il Sung fully supported it, saying of course

he would participate and such conference would be very beneficial.

My father asked him about the venue of the conference.

President Kim Il Sung said, Jakarta would be good. The historic Bandung Conference was also held in Indonesia.

Here we can know that it was not an accident that a great international meeting was held in Indonesia next year on the occasion of the 10th anniversary of Bandung Conference and President Kim Il Sung visited Indonesia in the significant April.

As aforesaid, the two leaders discussed that the countries of the new-emerging forces should unite and wage a vigorous struggle against imperialism and colonialism and reached a complete consensus of view.

At the talks, the issue of the Korean reunification was discussed and full support of Indonesia was firmly expressed to the stand of the Korean Party and government for national reunification.

President Kim Il Sung said, what important in the struggle for reunification of Korea are, first, the south Korean people should be awakened. Second, the people in the northern half should actively struggle, and third, the world public opinion should be roused to force the U.S forces to get out of south Korea and let the Korean issue be solved by the Korean themselves.

He emphasized that: "Your efforts would be very important and it was not diplomatic words."

My father immediately affirmed.

"You are right. I will do so. I hope Your Excellency Premier would be assured that Indonesia is making 100 per cent efforts for Korea's reunification. Indonesia will contribute to the struggle of the Korean people for reunification of Korea."

President Kim Il Sung thanked him and informed him in detail about the efforts of the Worker's Party and the government of DPRK for the reunification of the country.

He said, "We call for election for reunification to reunify our country peacefully. The election means the north and south Korean people set up a reunified government through election with their own hands. We proposed first, mutual visit and contacts between the north and south, if the issue of the election for reunification is not solved immediately. We said correspondence; economic exchange and visit of scientists, artists and sports persons would deepen mutual understanding.

We also said we can send electricity and steel and rice to south Korea. We also proposed organizing a supreme national assembly, keeping the present political systems in the north and south as they are, to coordinate each other. Next we proposed driving the U.S. forces out of south Korea and reducing by half the present armies of the the north and south. Then the people's burdens will be reduced and economic construction sped up, but the south Korean authorities refuse all our proposals. They closed the door and give no answer. We can not construe it otherwise than the U.S. imperialists' plot to continue to use south Korea as their military base."

My father attentively listened to him and said.

"All your proposals are very clear and reasonable."

Then he reassured him of his firm support and solidarity to the cause of independent and peaceful reunification of Korea.

The talk that day was an important occasion in deepening the relations between the two leaders and developing the friendly relations between the peoples of the two countries.

Significant Talk (2)

Significant talks continued next day, too. Main topics were on economic independence and economic management of the country, but as skillful diplomats, they had talks naturally with stories of everyday life. They exchanged greetings and my father offered a cigarette with a smile as on the previous day.

"Please smoke an imperialist cigarette."

President Kim Il Sung received it with a smile, and said. "Thank you. It is fine today."

My father said, "This morning I had an exercise outdoor. In the morning, too, the weather was excellent. The bedroom was hot. It seemed they heated the room very much."

President Kim Il Sung said, "The room was heated as you have come from a hot country. He asked, did the massagist massage you well last night? "

My father said he was fast asleep not knowing he had gone. When he woke up about one o'clock massagist had gone, he said and thanked for excellent food.

"Yesterday I took Korean food. Korean food comes in endlessly. Now I know which country we should ask for aid when food is short in Indonesia."

Started his speech so, my father admired the economic independence of Korea and wanted to know its secret.

He continued: "Here the cameramen are working hard. The picture taken during the art performance yesterday evening was already printed on today's newspaper. The printing technique is very high and paper is also good. In our country the printing technique is not high. So I told the minister concerned about it, and, he said yours is good because the state manages it. The newspaper *Rodong Sinmun* this morning is better than the *Pravda*. Showing *Rodong Sinmun*, he said:

"The newspaper of our country is not better than this. So I think we must learn from Korea."

President Kim Il Sung modestly said that the printing equipment is nice and ink is produced at home, but the paper is still bad. My father asked if the paper was imported.

President Kim Il Sung said it was produced at home, that in *Kilju* Pulp Factory.

His words evoked my father's envy and let him look back upon the painful reality of Indonesia. My father frankly said in a pitiful voice.

"Indonesian national capitalists always import. So I ask them to produce by themselves."

Then he related what happened during his visit to Egypt.

"15 years ago I visited Cairo. At that time the king of that country requested me to send 500 mango trees. So I sent 500 trees, and the Egyptians multiplied them and developed the mango processing industry and now are exporting mango juice. So I criticized A.M. Dasaad, member of the Supreme Advisory Council, why you cannot do so in Indonesia."

After listening to him, President Kim Il Sung said "Indonesia has a lot of resources."

My father agreed to the words, which were short but meaningful, and added:

"Now our country exports cocoa and palm oil to other countries, and they come back to Indonesia in the form of soap for bathing."

It meant it fattened capitalists of other countries. What to do to solve the issue in Indonesia with weak foundation of the industry? It was the problem my father wanted to know, first of all.

Reading my father's mind, President Kim Il Sung told him about the Korean experiences.

"We developed local industry. We have built large factories and small factories."

"As Your Excellency Premier said, it is important to build local industry," my father affirmed.

Sending a kind smile to my father, President Kim Il Sung continued to say:

"At first, we planned to build only large factories. To build

large ones, it is necessary to import equipment from other countries. We had great difficulties between 1956 and 1957 as equipment did not come from other countries. So from 1958 handicraftsmen were induced to build small factories with their hands. In order to live people need soaps, towels, vessels, cloth. But after the war we were not in a position to supply them. To import them foreign currency was necessary, but we had no foreign currency. So shortly after the war we were aided some consumer goods and food. We can ask once, but not continuously. So we gave money to the handicraftsmen to build factories. At first we demanded a county build only one factory. At the beginning the local factories made goods in a backward way. They wove socks and cloth with hands. Now one county has more than 10 factories. Now, the local industry accounts for 55~60 per cent of the general industrial income of the state. In this way we tried to produce essential goods at home."

His words gave confidence to my father. My father confidently said each time we wash our face every day we can not use American soap. He said to the suite members why should we act so stupidly.

He meant they should learn from the experiences of Korea which solved the issue of essential goods through the development of local industry.

President Kim Il Sung agreed with him and dwelt upon important problems arising in developing light industry and local industry.

"We induced people to use their own though their quality was low. We saw that goods imported from other countries were sold at high prices and our own cheaply. So people bought cheap one, that is, domestic goods."

My father expressed his view that it is right for the state to impose heavy taxes on imported goods.

President Kim Il Sung agreed with him and said, then domestic goods are sold and imported goods are not sold, and it is good to develop national industry.

My father asked a question.

"To make clear my understanding on import, I would like to ask one thing. You said you impose heavy taxes on imported goods, do you also do so on daily necessaries?"

"Yes," President Kim Il Sung said and continued: "so officials of the Soviet embassy asked, why you sell imported goods so expensively whereas imported goods are sold at low prices in the Soviet Union. We said to them that we are both socialist countries, but that is our state policy. Russians did not like it. But we do not sell machines expensively, only consumer goods."

He continued to say that imported goods should be sold expensively, otherwise large quantities of commodities of other countries would come, making it impossible to sell home-made commodities.

"You are right," my father nodded.

President Kim Il Sung stressed a need to improve the quality of home-made goods to the level of other countries, and said then the issue of duties on the imported goods can

be discussed again, and continued:

"When we do not use foreign currency in importing goods, we can increase state reserve. When foreign currency is used up for consumption, there would be no state reserve."

After listening to him, my father said, from this year we do not import rice. He meant that due to it the state reserve of foreign currency could be increased to a certain degree.

President Kim Il Sung said, it is great. When rice is imported a lot of money is used for it, and our country does mot import rice since 5 years ago, so we could save a lot of foreign currency. Suspension of import of rice is very good.

Then he asked how much money is used to import rice in Indonesia.

My father said, in the past 300 million US dollars were spent to import rice, but last year 120 million US dollars were spent to import rice, but from now with the money machines would be imported.

"Very good." President Kim Il Sung agreed.

To smiling President Kim Il Sung, my father said your county has motor industry and asked if buses were made also produced.

President Kim Il Sung said many buses are made, but as their quality is low, they are used only at home. Satisfaction of the need of his people is very important, my father said.

As abovementioned, my father, groping for the way of economic independence, learned a lot from the valuable successes and experiences of Korea.

In the course, my father was completely attracted to

President Kim Il Sung and wanted to have more frank and more efficient talks as quietly as possible.

President Kim Il Sung gave luncheon in honor of my father. In the luncheon, my father solemnly said; Korea is the best in all respects. Especially the development of industry is very fast. I will learn a lot from the great leader Your Excellency Premier Kim Il Sung.

Mentioning his impressions of the visit to the Pyongyang Students and Children's Palace, which was one of the most impressive events, my father said Korea had to have many illiterates after liberation and asked how illiteracy was abolished.

In reply to this question, President Kim Il Sung dwelt upon the abolition of illiteracy after liberation, the cultural revolution starting there from, and especially the successful solution of the issue of national cadres keenly necessary in the building of independent national economy.

As a result, my father had no more question in search of economic independence and was convinced of the possibility of achieving economic independence in Indonesia. It was a valuable income which could not be got even with gold.

Title of Honorary Academician to the "Engineer" Who Built "Bridge of Friendship"

During his visit to Korea, my father warmly felt what a special attention President Kim Il Sung was paying to him. President Kim Il Sung, shelving state affairs, accompanied my father from beginning to end and showed all sincerity.

A grand ceremony was held at the Pyongyang Grand Theatre on the 3rd to award the title of honorary academician of the Academy of Sciences to my father. Of course, President Kim Il Sung proposed it and participated in the ceremony.

The President of the Academy of Sciences read out the decision of the general meeting of the Academy of Sciences to award the title of the honorary academician to the President of Republic of Indonesia who had contributed to the development of science through his theoretical and practical activities and rendered great services to strengthening cooperative relations between the two countries in the fields of sciences and culture and awarded the certificate of the title of the honorary academician.

The moment welcome music was struck up and deafening applause burst out, and the two leaders firmly hugged each other and shook hands. My excited father took the floor.

"Comrade President of the Academy of Sciences, Comrades and friends. I am greatly moved by the title of honorary academician of the DPRK awarded to me today. I would like to express thanks for it."

My father had already 22 academic degrees of many countries. Universities in Asia, Africa, universities of Europe, the United States and Canada and universities of Latin America had conferred titles of honorary doctor on my father. Mentioning it, my father said, "Today you have awarded the title of honorary academician of the DPRK to

me. This title of honourary academician is higher than all the titles of honourary doctors I have received."

Indonesia achieved independence in the 20th century. Indonesia had to struggle against the rule of the imperialists for 350 years. Indonesia was revived in the developed 20th century. That is why Indonesia has the awareness that it should advance quickly not to lag behind developed countries. Because of the demand of the 20th century, the century of the atomic revolution and the century of space revolution, Indonesia is developing science and technology and education.

When Indonesia drove the imperialist forces out of its territory, the students of the primary schools, the lowest stage of education were only 500,000 of its 100 million populations. But in 1964, the students of the primary schools increased to 13 million. During the same period, students of middle schools increased from 500 to one million. In my father's Bandung university days, Indonesian university students were only 11. But in the mid-1960s 280,000 students studied at universities.

Universities were founded in different parts of vast Indonesia from the northern part of Sumatra to Kutaraja, Medan, Padang and Pelembang and to Jakarta, Bogor Bandung, Semarang, Jogjakarta, Surakarta, Surabaya of Java, to Banjarmasin of Kalimantan, to Makassar of Sulawesi, to Denpasar of Bali, to Ambon of Maluku, to Soekarnopura of West Irian. A university was set up in West Irian which was

only one year after return to Indonesia.

"What were so many universities founded and do 280,000 students study for?" asked my father and replied by himself, "It is because we know that new Indonesia can not be rapidly built without science. Now we have 3 atomic reactors in Jakarta, Bandung, Jogjakarta and it is a result of our efforts to develop science rapidly in Indonesia."

Audience sent warm greetings to the Indonesian President they had awarded the honorable title to. In the next part of his speech, he expressed his resolve to make efforts for development of friendly relations between peoples of many countries of the world.

"I am an engineer. In the past I built a bridge with reinforced concrete. Now I am building bridges of friendship between different nations of the whole world. First of all, I am building a bridge between all the anti-imperialist forces and new-emerging forces."

He followed, "As I said yesterday, when all the world forces oppressed by the imperialists unite firmly, and they become a steel-like army, the imperialist forces will surrender and be defeated, and we should strengthen our ranks. We should learn from each other. As I frankly said to Comrade Kim Il Sung, I have come here not only to convey the love of the Indonesian people to the Korean people but also to

further strengthen friendly relations and fraternity between the Indonesian people and Korean people and to learn from Korea in her efforts to build a prosperous and fair society.

By so doing, we will build a new world without imperialism, without oppression, without capitalism, where the humanity of the whole world can live happily in a friendly and fraternal atmosphere. I am leaving Korea tomorrow morning and go to Shanghai to have talks with Chinese Premier Zhou Enlai and concluded his speech. Believe me. I am returning carrying in my heart the warm love of the Korean people for the Indonesian people. Thank you."

My father said "Thank you" in Korean amid another thunderous applause.

His thanks represented his sincerity.

The Korean words represented his thanks for the warm welcome and ardent hospitality accorded by President Kim Il Sung and by the people and school youth, and children of Korea everywhere he went.

Amid Sea of Flowers of Welcome

My father and his party stayed in Pyongyang for 3 nights and 4 days. That was a short period, but it was days of happiness, days of pleasure and days of glory that passed by like a dream amid sea of flowers of welcome, and significant days when a beautiful rainbow of friendship spanned high in the sky.

Needless to say, the streets of Pyongyang and venues of functions were a sea of flowers and what was more impressive

was that hearts of all people were full of friendship and fraternity, their faces beaming with smile.

It can not be made by coercion.

Once, opponents of my father in Indonesia were jealous that tens of, and hundreds of thousand people cheered for him whenever he went and slandered that they were organized by supporters of my father.

That time, my father said, the people can be mobilized but please look at their faces, how can the pleasure and ecstasy on their faces be made by force.

When he found the pleasure and ecstasy of his people on the faces of the Korean people, Pyongyang citizens, what could he feel?

During the 100,000-strong meeting held in his honour in the *Moranbong* Stadium, my father, a man of sentimentality, expressed his feelings with his speech without written text.

My father took the floor and said unreservedly.

"First of all I will chant a slogan. Welcome to President Soekarno". But I like to be called 'Bung Karno' rather than to be called President Soekarno. Bung Karno sounds better as it means closer relations. I am your brother and friend. How about calling Premier Kim Bung Kim in our way?"

"Good. Please call me Bung." President Kim Il Sung said with a smile, and the suite members nearby all laughed.

Amid stormy cheers of hurrah, my father began his speech.

"Your Excellency respected Premier Kim Il Sung, Friends. I am your friend and comrade. I am your brother.

Conveying the friendly greetings, comradely greetings and greetings of comrade-in-arms of 104 million Indonesian people, I would like to say that some time ago we invited our brother and comrade Premier Kim Il Sung, to the functions of our Independence Day August 17. I invited him because we love our comrade Kim Il Sung and entire Korean people.

But at that time Comrade Kim Il Sung could not come to Indonesia because of the incident in Viet Nam. That is why, out of such love, we decided that Bung Karno should come to Korea if Comrade Kim Il Sung could not come to Indonesia."

Then he reiterated the support and solidarity of the Indonesian people to the Korean people in their struggle for the reunification of the country.

"The Indonesian people do everything in their power to support the cause of the Korean people to reunify their country, your struggle for not divided Korea, but a reunified Korea.

Believe. Please believe that 104 million Indonesian people are firmly standing behind you struggling to reunify Korea."

Deafening applause burst out.

My father spoke in Korean. The cheers of the Pyongyang citizens rang far and wide, shaking the sky and earth. I still remember my father trying hard to learn Korean words before his visit to Korea. That time, he used to practice his Korean before us, his children.

With greater excitement and passion, my father continued

his speech. He spoke about the "Indonesian revolution".

"Now, Indonesia is at the stage of revolution. The Indonesian revolution I mention is the greatest revolution. It is because it embraces at least 5 fields. First is national revolution. The Indonesian revolution is also political revolution. And the revolution is economic revolution and cultural revolution."

That day my father concluded his speech with the following exciting slogans.

"Let the Indonesian people and the Korean people continue to advance shoulder to shoulder, helping each other and in unity.

Long live Korea!

Long live Indonesia!

Long live Indonesia-Korea, Korea-Indonesia!

Thank you."

Amid another cheers, both of them hugged each other and clasped hands.

It was one of the most meaningful moments in the days of Korea visit. That day in the same *Moranbong* Stadium (now called Kim Il Sung Stadium) there was a special performance of the mass gymnastics "*Chollima* Korea" given in honor of my father and his party.

The moment my father and his suite members were conducted by President Kim Il Sung to the rostrum and Korean leading party and state officials took the rostrum of the stadium, spectators and performers all rose up and cheered "Long live Bung Karno!", "Long live Comrade

Kim Il Sung!" and the word "Welcome!" was written on the background.

The mass gymnastics excited my father and all the members of the delegation.

My father clapped hands at the turn of every scene.

When 7-year old pretty children ran towards the rostrum, raising cheers, and chanted hurrah, hopping, towards the two leaders, all present on the rostrum stood up and waved hands towards them.

It was really a touching scene.

At the last scene of performance all the performers came out running and danced in rings and the background displayed bouquets, flower rainbow symbolizing friendship and flags of the two countries, and cheers "Long live Korea-Indonesia Friendship!" burst forth. All the spectators rose up and chorused the "Song of Bung Karno", waving flags of the two countries and bundles of flowers.

Who has Soekarno
Who has Soekarno
It is the Republic of Indonesia

Leader of Indonesian people Soekarno
Indonesian people's Soekarno
Soekarno is always among the people

My father together with President Kim Il Sung waved greetings to the performers and spectators.

After the guests left, too, cheers and songs did not subside for a long time. It was really an impressive, proud and glorious historic moment.

After the mass meeting, my father visited the Pyongyang Student and Children's Palace. Before the palace standing on the *Jangdae* Hill in the heart of Pyongyang, many school children lined up and welcomed honored guests from the island country to the strains of welcome music.

In the corridor, halls and various circle rooms of the magnificent palace little girls wearing multi-colored jackets and pink flower-patterned skirts warmly welcomed the guests and presented bouquets.

In more than 500 rooms of the palace, many school children were conducting various extracurricular activities. When my father and his party entered the accordion and orchestra rehearsal room children played the Indonesian song "Sarinande".

Lyric and optimistic melody was loud in the room and my father and retinue sang, clapping hands. Leaving the room, my father praised the little performers, saying their performance was excellent.

The guests were accorded warm welcome also at the Sewing Room, Korean Painting Room, Radio Experiment Room and Motor Study Room.

At the gymnasium, my father and his retinue watched children's volleyball, gymnastic and boxing trainings for a while and had to stop for a long while on their way to the theater of the palace. Boys and girls who were rehearsing

dance, came running and surrounded the guests and did not let go of them, chanting "Bung Karno, Bung Karno".The cheerful and innocent children deeply impressed the guests.

The impressive visit that day ended with the appreciation of a song and dance performance given by 350 school children. The performance started with chorus of the Korean song "Fly, flag of the Children's Union" and orchestral music of the Indonesian song "Halo Halo Bandung" and various items enchanted the guests. Little performers sang Indonesian songs to the praise of the guests.

My father was so moved and thoughtful that he gave special task to the officials of the mission then and there to learn about the curriculum of the Pyongyang Students and Children's Palace.

It was too natural that during another talks my father made special mention of the significant visit to President Kim Il Sung.

Farewell Banquet

The not long days of visit flew by and my father and his party had to leave Pyongyang. Before his departure, my father gave a grand banquet at *Okryu* Restaurant on the shore of the *Taedong River* in honor of President Kim Il Sung.

He first expressed his sadness by talking about an unavoidable situation that forced him to leave Pyongyang.

"Your Excellency Premier Kim Il Sung, Your Excellencies and all my friends. Tomorrow we are leaving Korea. The days of my sojourn in Pyongyang were very pleasant. I desire

to stay longer. But I have to leave tomorrow because I have duties in other places. Premier Zhu Enlai is waiting for me in Shanghai.

By the 5th of this month, I will be out of Indonesia for a month and half. During the long time, I have visited many countries, had contacts with many governments and talked with leaders of many countries. But of the foreign visits for one month and a half, the visit to Korea is one of the most successful visits."

My father continued.

"In Pyongyang I have strengthened the friendly relations between Indonesia and Korea. Your Excellency Premier Kim Il Sung and I have reached complete agreement on all issues discussed. My beloved brother and friend Comrade Kim Il Sung! Three days ago I came as a friend but tomorrow I am leaving as a friend and comrade-in-arms."

My father expressed warm friendly feelings, saying, day after tomorrow I will return to Jakarta and will be far from you again, I do not know well how many thousands kilometers Pyongyang is from Jakarta.

"A very wide and great ocean is lying between us geographically. But I see a rainbow spanning the sky. You are at one end of the rainbow and we are at the other end. This rainbow is a symbol of our common ideal, symbol of joint struggle, a symbol of our mutual attachment and a symbol of our love."

My father also said, "I can not change the truth of the world. The vast ocean certainly exists between us and we can do nothing with it. But we have built a rainbow. The rainbow has been built by you and built by us. Calling for further solidifying the rainbow, he expressed friendship and fraternity towards President Kim Il Sung and the Korean people."

Saying he was remembering what he read in an Indian mythological collection, my father related the following story.

The Indian myth is about a tree called Kalpataru. If a desire is expressed under this tree it is realized no matter whose desire it is and what desire it is. If there is such a tree and I am standing under the tree what desire would I express?

Under the tree I will not express the desire to remove the ocean between Indonesia and Korea and to make Indonesia and Korea closer geographically. It is because such desire can not come true.

So saying, my father continued in a sincere voice.

"Then, what desire would I express? I will express a wish for long life and good health for Comrade Premier Kim Il Sung. I will wish the Korean people would further prosper and become stronger under your leadership. And I will wish the friendship between Indonesia and Korea would be everlasting. I will wish the world would be a better world through the friendship and cooperation between Indonesia and Korea. And I will wish a world without capitalism and imperialism. I will wish to build a world in which whole mankind would live in fraternity and friendship."

His sincere and impressive speech enjoyed a unanimous sympathy of the participants in the banquet and warm applause of all present.

Concluding his speech, he requested all participants to rise for a while and proposed a toast to the health of President Kim Il Sung. Toasts were exchanged in a cordial atmosphere overflowing with friendly feelings.

Then President Kim Il Sung made a speech in reply.

"Your Excellency respected President Soekarno! Respected honored Indonesian guests! The visit of President Soekarno and honoured guests is coming to an end. Your visit is short, but made a great contribution to the strengthening of the friendship and unity between the peoples of the two countries. Unity is an important guarantee for the victory in the liberation struggle of the people.

The peoples of Asia, Africa and Latin America were oppressed and humiliated by the imperialists for a long time. The peoples of all countries in Asia, Africa and Latin America will foil all sorts of moves of the imperialists and struggle in firmer unity and thus win a great victory and render greater services to peace and progress of mankind.

I am convinced that President Soekarno's visit to our country this time will not only contribute to the strengthening of the friendship and solidarity between the peoples of our two countries, but also render great services to the common cause of the peoples in Asia, Africa and Latin America."

After President Kim Il Sung finished his speech, my father went to the microphone and sang a song and his suite members also sang for President Kim Il Sung and gave pleasure to him.

President Kim Il Sung expressed thanks to the guests for their sincerity and told Korean artists to sing to please the guests.

At his request, Korean artists sang the Korean song "*Song of Spring*" and the Indonesian song "*Song of River Solo*", which won applause.

Brightly smiling he told them to sing more as the guests liked. This time the artists sang the Indonesian song "*Lullaby*". They sang so well that my father and his suite members applaused and did not feel the lapse of time in ecstasy.

My father thanked President Kim Il Sung for the songs sung so well, and when the Korean artists sang "*Bung Karno Siapa Yang Punya*" all enthusiastically followed them.

President Kim Il Sung encouraged the singers, saying you sing very well. Please sing more. The guests are very satisfied and admire that the pronunciation of the Indonesian songs is very correct.

After the banquet my father and his retinue were leaving to the lodging. Artists standing in lines sang the Indonesian song "*Song of Farewell*", kindly seeing off the guests.

The two leaders requested each other to take the car first, delaying the departure. President Kim Il Sung made my father unable to concede any longer, saying, it is Korean custom for the host to leave after sending off the guest.

After my father got on the car President Kim Il Sung

mounted the car. This is how the last significant night of the Korean visit deepened. That night my father and his suite members could not bring themselves to sleep. They were too reluctant to part with so beautiful a country, so honest-minded a people and so great President Kim Il Sung.

They were missing their long-seperated beloved country and at the same time, cherishing in their hearts and sweet country where close friends as close as their kinsfolk were living.

At the unforgettable night, my father ruminated the speech to be made at the airport next morning word by word.

Again At the Airport

On the morning on November 4, 1964 my father left Pyongyang after successfully concluding his visit to Korea.

President Kim Il Sung came out to the airport to see off my father.

Numerous senders-off lined up tens of kilometres as when my father arrived, flags of the two countries were flying and Indonesian songs rang at the airport wet with pang of farewell. A grand ceremony was held according to the protocol procedures.

President Kim Il Sung spoke first.

"Your Excellency respected President, Respected guests of Indonesia! In recent days we have spent a very pleasant and joyful time together with honored guests of Indonesia. Though we are parting, the friendship between us will remain forever.

The visit of President Soekarno and his party to our country made our two countries closer, further deepened the friendly relations of the peoples of the two countries and further hardened the resolve of the peoples of the two countries to fight always together against imperialism.

The friendly feelings you have brought to our people and their support and solidarity expressed to our just struggle have become a great encouragement to our people."

Then he wished my father a fresh success in his work for the prosperity of the Republic of Indonesia and for the common cause of the peoples in Asia, Africa and Latin America and warmly wished him and honored guests of Indonesia good health on their way home.

My father thanked President Kim Il Sung for his kind farewell speech and approached the microphone.

"Your Excellency Kim Il Sung, comrades and friends. Time has come for me to leave, to part with you. I have been out of our country for a month. During that time, I have visited several countries and governments, of which Korean visit was most successful.

I would like to express deep thanks to the Korean government for its so warm hospitality."

Readers, please stop reading here for a moment and compare my father's speech at the farewell banquet yesterday with his speech this day. Then you will find an interesting issue.

At the banquet he described the Korean visit as "one of

the most successful visits" and at the airport described it as the most successful one.

My father might have done so in order to express the indescribable impression on Korea in a few words despite his unique oratory.

He said, at this moment I am greatly moved, because you have gathered here from early morning despite cold weather, are expressing friendly feeling to us and sending us off so warmly, and continued his speech.

"As Comrade Kim Il Sung said, and as I said, Indonesia and Korea have very close and friendly fraternal relations and are waging a joint struggle. In other words, we are waging a close joint struggle, a joint struggle against imperialism, against colonialism, for independence and freedom, for a prosperous and fair society, to reunify the country and to drive foreign occupationist forces."

Concluding his speech, he expressed infinitely feelings towards the Korean people with the following impressive words.

"During my sojourn in Korea, I have felt as if I were in my homeland, as if among my people and at home. But now at this moment I must part with you. Today I part with you and tomorrow I will arrive in Jakarta thousands of kilometers far from here.

Indonesian has a saying that though far in eyes, close in mind. I will say good-bye with the saying though far in eyes, close in mind. Long live the prosperous Korean people! Let

us further solidify friendship between Indonesia and Korea! Good-bye."

After finishing his speech, he warmly hugged President Kim Il Sung and said goodbye with a pang of parting. A few minutes later my father and his retinue boarded the airplane and took off.

Leaving Pyongyang Airport behind, where a sea of flowers was rippling and cheers were endless, the special plane turned north. The Korean visit of my father Soekarno as the President of the Republic of Indonesia closed but its story did not end yet.

It is because at the talks between my father and Chinese Premier Zhou Enlai that day, my father's story of his visit to Korea and Premier Zhou Enlai's praise of President Kim Il Sung were the main topics.

At the Soekarno and Zhu Enlai Talk

After some time the special plane arrived in Chinese large city Shanghai. At the airport, old acquaintance Zhou Enlai, Premier of the State Council of the People's Republic of China received my father.

World's large city Shanghai is on the shore of the Huangpu River, a tributary of the Chang River about 50 kilometres from the east coast of China. In a car running fast along the straight road on the west shore of the River, my father was feasting his eyes on the street of city.

After a short rest at the lodgings he met Premier Zhou

Enlai and chatted in a friendly atmosphere.

Views were exchanged on the situation of the Far East Asia and Southeast Asia, and a number of other international issues, and Zhou Enlai paid deep attention to the result of my father's visit to Korea.

My father said:

"Your Excellency Zhou Enlai, I went to Korea as a friend and today come back not only as a friend, but also as a comrade-in-arms. There is a saying that at the first meeting people make acquaintance and at second meeting become brothers. But after the first meeting I come back as a comrade-in-arms.

His Excellency Kim Il Sung is my close friend and brother. His Excellency Kim Il Sung is an unforgettable man. At first meeting he makes a stranger an old acquaintance with his kind smile, rich feelings and warm humanity. I take this opportunity to convey through Your Excellency my deep thanks to His Excellency Mao Tse-tung for his request to visit Korea."

Zhou Enlai agreed with my father.

"Thank you. I will convey Your Excellency President's regards to Chairman Mao."

He said he was also pleased to hear about the good result of my father's visit to Korea.

That day, Zhou Enlai told an impressive story President Kim Il Sung had said to the Chinese friends. When he has a

friend to remember with pleasure, certainly he must be a happy man. Love of those engaged in revolution does not know the barrier of nationality, language and religious belief. Sincerely sealed friendship and love do not fade or wear away.

Listening to the story which is to have been said by President Kim Il Sung, my father saw in his mind's eyes bright and modest President Kim Il Sung he was together with for a few days and he had parted with a few hours before. Remembering him, my father deeply felt the validity of the proposition he had heard. He could not tell where that human love gives rise to love for nation and love for nation produces love for mankind.

That day he also heard from Zhou Enlai the surprising news that that year a bronze statue of President Kim Il Sung had been built at the Yuwen Middle School in Jilin, northeast China. The bronze statue was the first statue of the head of state of other country built in China.

As far as I know, according to internal regulations of China that time it was not allowed to build a bronze statue of an individual or to name a city or street after an individual. My father probably knew that.

Anyhow, the erection of the bronze statue of President Kim Il Sung in China was a surprise.

As a matter of fact, some people in China said at that time, if a bronze statue of a foreigner should be built in China that of Marx should be built first, and some others maintained that that of Lenin should be erected.

But Chairman Mao Tse-tung refuted all their views and

concluded that the bronze statue of President Kim Il Sung should be built. Chinese Party and government officials and all people fully supported the decision of Chairman Mao.

It was a manifestation of the love, respect and duty of the Chinese party, government and people for President Kim Il Sung who had fought together with them against the common enemy in the days of the anti-Japanese and anti-US wars and assisted the Chinese revolution during the Chinese internal revolutionary war and thus showed a great example of proletarian internationalism.

Chairman Mao Tse-tung gave the important task to build the bronze statue of President Kim Il Sung to his most trustworthy comrade-in-arms Premier Zhou Enlai.

Premier Zhou Enlai selected a sculptor, a graduate of the Beijing College of Fine Arts who was distinguishing himself as the creator of the bronze statue. Jiang Jieshi attempted to take him to Taiwan but he did not betray the Communist Party that had brought him up as genuine man and a patriot.

He asked Premier Zhou for a photograph necessary for sculpture. His demand was conveyed to Korea immediately. But the photograph did not arrive though the appointed date had passed.

It was known later that President Kim Il Sung resolutely opposed it. The sculptor had no alternative but to refer to photographs carried in the publications. It was of course, excellent.

Learning the situation, Zhou Enlai advised the sculptor to go to Jilin to visit the Yuwen Middle School where President

Kim Il Sung studied and the battle sites and historic sites where he had conducted revolutionary activities.

Hearing the story, my father said, Premier Zhou was telling him an excellent story and asked. "Why did you build the bronze statue of His Excellency Kim Il Sung at the Yuwen Middle School in Jilin?"

Zhou Enlai told him of the revolutionary activities conducted by President Kim Il Sung in his childhood with his name registered in the school.

"That is how we have built the bronze statue of Comrade Kim Il Sung in the land of China this year, representing the respect of the 600 million Chinese people."

Zhou Enlai impressively told him of the sincere aids rendered by Comrade Kim Il Sung to the Vietnamese people in their anti-US national salvation resistance despite the difficult conditions of the division of Korea and her direct confrontation with the US imperialists.

In the talk with Premier Zhou Enlai my father did not feel the passage of time listening to the story on President Kim Il Sung.

On the airline from Shanghai to the homeland across the spacious Pacific my father thought of his visit to Korea, about President Kim Il Sung all the time.

Up to that time he had visited self-styled big powers and many big and small developed countries and was accustomed to the reception as honored guest everywhere he went. But nowhere had he been accorded such a welcome and hospitality as in Korea.

My father met many would-be leaders of the world.

But nowhere had he met so charming a man as President Kim Il Sung. Defeat of the Japanese imperialists and accomplishment of the cause of national liberation! Defeat of the US imperialists and miracle of *Chollima*! Support and encouragement to the world people in their anti-imperialist, national liberation struggle!

The great idea that can not be expressed otherwise but "*Juche*" which is a Korean word! Brightness like the sun, noble charisma and prominent personality!

Who on the earth could dare to compare himself to him with such merits. If there were a core in the human world and the center in the human society, the center must be Premier Kim Il Sung.

In a few months he would come to my beloved motherland Indonesia. How to greet him, what pleasure to give him, and what gift to present to him? With such endless thought, my father had no time to feel tiredness on the long airline.

With the thought that he should go to the motherland as quickly as possible and hasten preparations to receive him, he felt his plane too slow. So he cast his eyes out of the window, when beloved Jakarta came into sight.

That is how the beautiful rainbow of friendship spanned Indonesia and Korea with its both ends deep-rooted in Jakarta and Pyongyang.

IV

PRESIDENT KIM IL SUNG IN INDONESIA

Soekarno waits for President Kim Il Sung

After returned from a state visit to Korea, my father waited for President Kim Il Sung's visit to Jakarta. At first it was scheduled that President Kim Il Sung would visit Indonesia on the occasion of the Independence Day, August 17, 1964.

The Korean Ambassador to Indonesia informed my father about President Kim Il Sung's plan. My father was so glad. He sent an official invitation and organized a State Guest Reception Committee chaired by Secretary of State Affairs. He put the army, naval, air forces and police on the alert and personally directed the work of the Reception Committee.

But the situation of Southeast Asia was rapidly deteriorated; making it was impossible to realize the plan. The United States fabricated the so-called "Gulf of Tongking Incident" alleging that their ship was attacked on the open sea, straining up the situation and, conducting provocative

military exercise on the sea off Indonesia and threatened our country.

In November that year, my father visited Korea first and met President Kim Il Sung. He again invited President Kim Il Sung to Indonesia, convinced him to go to Indonesia along with my father. On the way to Indonesia, my father said, they could meet the Mauritanian President.

It was, of course, an unfeasible request. Foreign visit of the head of state of a country cannot be decided so offhand. But it shows how earnestly my father was willing to invite President Kim Il Sung to our country.

Of course, it was for the strengthening and development of the friendly relations between the two countries and for the unity of the new-emerging forces. It would also constitute an important opportunity to enhance the international position of Indonesia and increase the prestige of the Indonesian President.

That is why my father, addressing the 100,000-strong meeting held in his honor during his visit to Pyongyang, invited him to Indonesia once again. As a result, President Kim Il Sung visited Indonesia around the celebrations of the 10th anniversary of the Bandung Conference.

On the Korean side, the preparations of the visit were supervised by leader Kim Jong Il who was guiding the general affairs of the country while working at the Central Committee of the Workers' Party of Korea.

Before the visit Kim Jong Il dispatched advance party twice for perfect security. Our side accorded special hospitality with

important task, and assured them the security of President Kim Il Sung during his visit. There was reason why our side and the Korean side paid especially deep attention to the security. Earlier the imperialists and their hirelings had laid a bomb in the airplane to be used by Zhou Enlai of China and blew it up in the air. At that time Zhou Enlai and his party could avoid the disasters because they had changed the plane. Nobody knew what kind of plots they would hatch now. So there should be no mistake at all.

Knowing it better than others, my father met the advance parties from Korea and ordered the Indonesian security personnel to help them as best as possible. He ordered officials concerned including the Security Chief of the Presidential Palace to be perfect in the guard of His Excellency Premier Kim Il Sung, saying the world reactionaries force including the U.S. imperialists fear him most.

He said to the chief of the Korean advance party: "I am very glad to meet you. We are all making preparations to receive His Excellency Kim Il Sung," and let the members of the advance party attend the official functions he participated in.

It was aimed at showing the guard of the President to them and thus let security personnel of the two countries to cooperate on the highest level. Concerning the intention of the President a security man who guided the Korean advance party said to his Korean counterparts.

"Your accompaniment of President Soekarno is for us to receive great assistance in the guard during the future visit of His Excellency Premier Kim Il Sung to Indonesia. This time

see our work and give us advice."

One morning, a large state function was held with the participation of many foreign guests. My father ordered the Commander of the Bodyguard Regiment, chief of the Guard of the Presidential Palace as follows:

"During the function today, let the general from Korea sit beside me. You Commander of the Regiment, convey my order to him directly."

So the Korean general leading the advance party sat together with my father with the head of state of a country. Regarding the special privilege the Korean friends were enjoying as his own, a high-ranking official of our country said:

"It is certain that our President has special feelings toward His Excellency Kim Il Sung of Korea. It is good that you enjoy high treatment this time. It is our pleasure."

That day during rest after function, too, my father invited the Korean general to his side and accorded him all kinds of hospitality, and in the evening met him again at the lounge and told him not to worry as the entire Indonesian people would ensure for the security of His Excellency Premier Kim Il Sung. He proposed a toast to *Chollima* of Korea and personally poured wine for him.

As you, readers, understand, this is my father's well-known style. He always wanted to make his guests, whoever they are, to feel comfort and enjoy the Indonesian hospitality.

My father knew well that *Chollima* was a symbol of the greatness of Premier Kim Il Sung, symbol of prospering Korea. It was when my father was going back to his lodging

after the Pyongyang City Mass Meeting held in honor of him during his visit to Korea. When his car was running up to the *Mansu* Hill along the road at the foot of *Moran* Hill, he happened to see the bronze statue of the winged horse *Chollima* flying into the sky.

My father who was lost in deep thought looking up at the statue, requested the Korean protocol official who was guiding the delegation to tell him about the *Chollima* in the evening.

The official proudly said:

"The Korean people erected the bronze statue of *Chollima* to tell the generations to come the greatness of the fatherly leader who brought the legendary winged horse which is said to have run a thousand *ri* at a gallop, into reality. Looking at the bronze statue, the Korean people feel from the bottom of their heart the iron will and faith, infinite enthusiasm and spirit of the great leader who is leading the revolution and construction outstripping the time and see in it our proud country dynamically advancing at the speed of *Chollima* under the leadership of President Kim Il Sung."

The official also impressively told about the wise instructions of President Kim Il Sung who, finding the draft of the statue of *Chollima* made by the sculptors without wings saw to it that wings were attached to *Chollima*, saying the horse symbolizes the extraordinary high speed of socialist construction.

His story gave a clear conception of *Chollima* of Korea. The Korean people finished post-war reconstruction in a few years, increased industrial output by tens of per cent a year and turned a backward country into a powerful socialist state, shattering the sophistry of the imperialists that Korea would not rise up again even after 100 years. It was the miracle of *Chollima*!

On the previous day, too, my father, admiring the brilliance of Korea well known with the miracle of *Chollima*, said to his suite members:

"During the past Korean war the United States dropped 428,000 bombs on Pyongyang city alone and reduced it to ashes. As you see with your own eyes, Korea has risen up remarkably as today for a little more than 10 years after the war. Is this not a miracle?

I have visited many countries, but I find the bronze statue of *Chollima* best of all in the world either in its great theme and idea, but also in its formative and artistic aspect that the magnificent 140-ton *Chollima* was put on a 50-metre high stone tower. Seeing the bronze statue of *Chollima* alone I can know why the world people call Korea country of *Chollima*. You had better see the bronze statue of *Chollima* once again."

As he was so charmed by *Chollima*, he proposed a toast to *Chollima*. During a function held a few days later, too my father specially treated the advance party, saying, "Korean brothers, please come and sit here", and during their local

tour, ordered a minister to guide them.

Not only my father but also the First Deputy Prime Minister, the Second Deputy Prime Minister and other high-ranking officials, political and public personages, high-ranking officers of the ground, naval and air forces and police showed all their sincerity for preparation of reception, longing for President Kim Il Sung to come to Indonesia as early as possible.

The Chief of Staff of the Guard Regiment of the Presidential Palace informed the Korean friends, "This time we have done everything in our power to receive His Excellency Premier Kim Il Sung and all the ground, naval and air forces and police throughout the country are in standby."

The Chief of Staff of the Ground Force, Chief of Staff of the Navy, Chief of Staff of the Police and Director of the Jakarta City Police also proudly told the Korean friends that they were making best efforts for security.

Officials of the Embassy of the DPRK in Indonesia met the First and Second Deputy-Prime Ministers, Minister of Civil Administration, Minister of Information, Minister of State, Minister of National Construction and Planning, Minister of Home Affairs, Mayor of Jakarta, First Deputy Minister of Foreign Affairs, Director of Protocol and had specific discussions on practical issues and did specific work with the military.

Under the active support of the President, the Communist Party, National Party, Youth Front and other political parties and public organizations made active preparations concerning

the projected visit of President Kim Il Sung. At that time the Communist Party mobilized 6,000 propagandists in Jakarta.

Korean documentaries *Bridge of Friendship* and *Chollima Korea* were screened at the Presidential Palace with the participation of my father and high-ranking officials of the government and "Korean Film Weeks" were declared in the Capital Jakarta and many other cities. Booklet "Democratic People's Republic of Korea" was printed in Indonesian as well as the collection of impressions *New Korea* written by foreign visitors to Korea.

President Kim Il Sung Leaves for a Long Journey

There is a Korean saying that: "They go to far-off south following friend". It may mean that there cannot be any hesitation and vacillation on the way to one's friend no matter how far it may be and whatever difficulty there may be. The visit of President Kim Il Sung to Indonesia is like going to far-off south following friend. It was on March 10, 1965 after his visit to Indonesia was decided.

Foreign Minister of Korea went to President Kim Il Sung to report about the selection of suite members who would visit Indonesia. President Kim Il Sung asked if there was any problem, and the Minister said, there was no problem, but frankly speaking he could not sleep with a worry about the President's security because of the complicated situation there.

President Kim Il Sung said: "Because of the tense situation of Southeast Asia you worry about my security, but there is no need to worry too much. Didn't we fight

in the mountains braving indescribable difficulties? Don't worry, but make scrupulous preparations, and laughed a hearty laughter."

In April he was so unwell that he was not in a position to make a long journey. The Party Central Committee requested him several times to postpone the visit and his close associates, too, availed themselves of every opportunity to request him.

But President Kim Il Sung set out on a long journey, saying: "Have we ever put off what we should do because of this kind of thing? During the anti-Japanese revolutionary struggle we walked a long way to get a comrade. Can't we overcome this sort of difficulty in going to do work with a country with upwards of 100 million populations? President Soekarno invited me. How can we postpone the visit again? It is out of question."

It was on April 9, 1965. The airline of his special plane was Kunming of China-Rangoon of Myanmar-Jakarta. The delegation led by him consisted of Vice-Premier, Minister of Foreign Affairs and other senior Party and state officials.

But the most honored guest was leader Kim Jong Il, the son of President Kim Il Sung. The Korean side intended to include him who was assisting the President's work most closely as an official member of the delegation. But he declined, and President Kim Il Sung also agreed to his view, and said:

"Comrade Kim Jong Il adamantly opposes his inclusion

as an accompanying official, saying if it is known who he is, he would be restricted in activities because of restrictions by protocol usage and the guards also would be dispersed. ...He demanded himself be informed as *a guard offic* in the official document, saying the first purpose of his going to Indonesia is my guard. So it would be good not to clarify him as he demanded."

As a result, Kim Jong Il was included in the delegation in the capacity of "a guard officer".

The memoirs *In the Image of a Great Loyalist* written by Foreign Minister (Later Vice-President) Pak Song Chol on his activities in Indonesia, in the first part, quoted page 54 of "File 147, The visit of the Great Leader Comrade Kim Il Sung to the Republic of Indonesia" archived in the Ministry of Foreign Affairs of this country.

Though he was known as "a guard officer", Kim Jong Il's company with President Kim Il Sung during his visit to Indonesia was a historic event of great significance and a great fortune to the Korean delegation, too. Because of the aforesaid reason, his historic visit to Indonesia was too little known to us.

Therefore, I think my book should be not only a book on President Kim Il Sung's visit to Indonesia but also on Kim Jong Il's visit to Indonesia. Readers will soon learn that my view is correct.

President Kim Il Sung left Pyongyang and arrived in Kunming of Yunnan Province of China. In order to receive him stopping over in Kunming overnight, the First Secretary

of the Yunnan Provincial Committee of the Communist Party of China, Governor of the Province and other senior local officials and Vice-Minister of Foreign Affairs dispatched from the capital came out to the airport. The guests were also warmly received by secretaries of the Provincial Party Committee and deputy governors of the province, generals of the unit of the Chinese People's Liberation Army stationed in Kunming, First Secretary of the Kunming City Party Committee, Mayor of Kunming and many other local party and government officials and public personages, Korean Ambassador to China and embassy staff members and thousands of welcomers.

On the way to the guesthouse tens of thousand people welcomed President Kim Il Sung, singing and dancing. But unfortunately, he was more uncomfortable with high fever. Not knowing it the Chinese side requested him to receive the Vice-Minister of Foreign Affairs.

Though unwell, President Kim Il Sung received Chinese Vice-Minister of Foreign Affairs Zhang Hanfu who had come on behalf of Premier Zhou Enlai and was informed of Premier Zhou Enlai's visit to many Asian and African countries. The Vice-Minister requested him to go after a few days' rest, saying he had just had a telephone call from Premier Zhou Enlai asking him to request President Kim Il Sung to leave after a few days' rest.

President Kim Il Sung thanked for it and said he had to leave immediately as breach of promise with the opposite side contradicts diplomatic usage. A more awkward thing

happened that evening. The First Secretary of the Yunnan Provincial Party Committee and Governor of the Province gave a grand banquet in their joint name and invited him. Officials were confused. They could not refuse in consideration of the diplomatic usage nor could accept because of the health of President Kim Il Sung. They did not know what to do.

It was leader Kim Jong Il who adopted a resolute and wise decision. He said as the President was not paying an official visit to the city but just stopping over on his way to other country, it would not be impolite for him not to participate in the banquet given by the Chinese side, the question was to ensure the health of the leader, you should tell the Chinese side well not to give the banquet.

That evening Kim Jong Il took care of President Kim Il Sung without leaving the lounge even after he got an injection and was asleep. Learning that the President's illness turned for the better in the early morning, he said with pleasure that it was worth keeping vigil. It was about 4 in the morning.

Accustomed to work from early morning, President Kim Il Sung got up early that morning, too, and received Vice-Minister Zhang Hanfu again who was waiting in the guest house at an urgent instruction of Premier Zhou Enlai. Worrying about his health who was working hard without taking care of himself even abroad Kim Jong Il let a doctor examine the President.

Reporting about the result of the examination, the

doctor said President Kim Il Sung had to leave after 2~3 days' treatment. Kim Jong Il supported the proposal of the officials, and proposed leaving after President Kim Il Sung recovered his health after a few days' treatment.

But the President, looking round at those present, said, "Though I am unwell I must go, that country has probably worked out all schedule and organized all things. What if I do not go? My illness may not go worse. Where there is will, illness is bound to obey. We must go today. Kim Jong Il was too concerned and anxious that he earnestly said how could you make a long journey, when the fever did not go down completely? You should leave one day later. This is not only my wish but also the unanimous wish of the accompanying guards. We cannot be easy when you leave under this condition."

All the accompanying officials anxiously looked at the two men, their eyes full of tears. As if in deep thought, President Kim Il Sung did not say a word for a while. In a resolute voice, he said: "We departed putting off a lot of work. How can we delay on the way? If we stay here the receiving country should change all schedule and then the problems may become complicated. Let us leave."

President Kim Il Sung continued:

"You propose leaving for Indonesia later after I receive treatment and fever goes down. But from olden times there was a saying that fire should be treated with fire. Now I have fever, but if I shed sweat in Jakarta in the tropical zone with

high temperature, fever may go down and my illness may be cured. Illness should be treated with medicine, but the best of medicines is strong will. I will endure. So let all of us leave with a smile according to the schedule of the visit."

So warm were his confidence and will to keep the promise with the Indonesian President, the promise with the Indonesian people. But at that time none of us knew that there was such a tearful story concerning his visit to our country.

I was deeply moved to hear the story while writing this book this time. Through this story alone, we can feel his greatness more warmly. That is why people call President Kim Il Sung a great revolutionary who devotes his all solely to the revolution, that is why people call him supreme incarnation of noble duty who values duty and that is why people call him a great internationalist, the sun of all people.

Meeting in Cheering Jakarta

At 1.30 p.m. by Indonesian time on April 10, 1965, the great leader of the Korean people President Kim Il Sung arrived at the Kemayoran Airport of Jakarta, the capital of our country for an official state visit to Indonesia. Amid thunderous cheers of hurrah, my father warmly received President Kim Il Sung before the ramp of the airplane. They exchanged greetings and warmly hugged each other.

The heart of the man who was waiting was so warm and so was the heart of the comer, so their reunion was so warm

and impressive! After warm reunion, my father introduced the high-ranking officials of Indonesia present at the airport to President Kim Il Sung.

A grand ceremony was held in his honor. The Chief of the Guard of Honor offered salute to President Kim Il Sung, national anthems of Korea and Indonesia were solemnly struck up and 21-gun salute boomed. To the strains of military band, the two leaders reviewed a guard of honor of the three services and police and exchanged speeches.

My father made a speech first.

"Respected Your Excellency Marshal Kim Il Sung! We are greatly rejoiced over the visit of Your Excellency Marshal Kim Il Sung to our country and express thanks for it. I invited Your Excellency Marshal Kim Il Sung long ago to visit Indonesia in order to strengthen friendship between the peoples of Indonesia and Korea. We waited for Your Excellency Marshal Kim Il Sung to come to our country during the functions on August 17 last year. But at that time Your Excellency Marshal Kim Il Sung could not come because circumstance did not permit. But I was not disappointed, but continued to wait.

Later we heard the news that Your Excellency Marshal Kim Il Sung would come on April 7 and waited for the day with great pleasure. But this time, too, you could not come because the situation did not permit, and we were a little disappointed. But at last today Your Excellency Marshal Kim Il Sung has come to our country, and I am

very pleased.

All of 105 million Indonesian people are welcoming you. I express the warm feelings of the Indonesian people."

My father continued:

"During your sojourn in our country, Your Excellency Marshal Kim Il Sung will visit some regions of Indonesia and participate in the celebrations of the 10th anniversary of the Bandung Conference. During the days you will see the Indonesian people stubbornly fighting in single-minded unity against imperialism and new and old colonialism and learn how ardently our people desire to strengthen friendship with the Korean people. I, as President of the Republic of Indonesia and as the leader of the Indonesian revolution, warmly welcome you to our country once again."

Then President Kim Il Sung stood before microphone. Amid unending stormy cheers of hurrah he began his speech.

"Respected Your Excellency President Soekarno. This time we are visiting your beautiful country at the kind invitation of Your Excellency President Soekarno, carrying with ourselves the friendly feelings of the Korean people towards the Indonesian people. Our visit to Indonesia before the 10th anniversary of the Bandung Conference makes the visit more significant.

It was my long-cherished desire to visit the Republic of Indonesia and meet the Indonesian people. The realization

of my desire today gives me great pleasure. I am very sorry for my delayed visit. This time we will witness with our own eyes the valuable achievements made by the Indonesian people in their struggle and see their heroic struggle and learn a lot from it."

When he finished his speech cheers of hurrah burst out again and welcome music rang. Guided by my father he passed through a traditional flower gate of Indonesia. Women beautifully decorated with luxurious costumes of more than 100 tribes hung garlands on him walking through the gate, presented him with Melati bouquet and welcomed him throwing fragrant confetti. After a while they mounted an open car and headed for the Presidential Palace. On the road of more than 8 kilometers from the airport to the Presidential Palace, welcome tower and welcome gate were set up at many places and hundreds of thousand welcomers gathered.

Waving their hands the welcomers chanted "Long live President Soekarno!", "Long live Premier Kim Il Sung" "Long live Korea!" and the "Song of General Kim Il Sung" resounded from loud speakers. At that time there was no man in Indonesia who did not know the "Song of General Kim Il Sung". My father who visited Korea instigated the people throughout the country to learn the immortal song.

The warm welcome of the people of our country who were regarding the visit of President Kim Il Sung to Indonesia as a great event, as a great pleasure became

more ardent when the open car carrying the two leaders arrived at the Independence Square with a 137-metre high Independence Tower. The crowds filling the Square decked with flags of the two countries and color pennants warmly welcomed President Kim Il Sung, chorusing the "Song of General Kim Il Sung" in Korean.

That day was declared as a holiday in the capital Jakarta, portraits of President Kim Il Sung were solemnly hung and slogans written in Indonesian and Korean were seen such as "Long live His Excellency Premier Kim Il Sung!", "Warm welcome to His Excellency Premier Kim Il Sung and his party!", "Long live friendship between the peoples of Indonesia and Korea!" and "Let the peoples of new-emerging countries of Asia and Africa unite and destroy new and old colonialism!" A poster showed chains of imperialism and colonialism cut off by the Banteng symbolizing Indonesia and strong hooves of the winged horse *Chollima* symbolizing Korgunturea.

That day radios and televisions of Jakarta transmitted special programs in welcome of President Kim Il Sung and all newspapers carried his photo-accompanied biography and editorials and articles welcoming him. Under the banner "Warm welcome to Marshal Kim Il Sung" the newspaper *Harian Rakyat* carried his photo-accompanied biography, an editorial and the words and musical note of the song "Soekarno -Kim Il Sung".

Soekarno, Kim Il Sung
Like a high mountains
They a e fi m and sacred
They a e fi m and sacred
The 're bulwarks of independence

Soekarno, Kim Il Sung
Like a brave eagle
They a e flying in the ast sky
They a e flying in the ast sky
The 're defenders of liberation and peace

Long live Soekarno, Long Live Kim Il Sung
Carrying forward Bandung spirit
Indonesia and Korea go shoulder to shoulder
We'll be rich and strong

The song represents the infinite respect and reverence of the Indonesian people for the two leaders. The newspaper *Suluh Indonesia* carried special write-ups under the banner "Warm welcome to His Excellency Premier Kim Il Sung! Long live Bung Karno! Long live His Excellency Premier Kim Il Sung!" and the newspaper *Warta Bakti* under the banner "Warm welcome to His Excellency Marshal Kim Il Sung, Premier of the Cabinet of the DPRK!" Other newspapers and magazines such as *Economy National*, *Bintang Timur*, *Indonesian Herald*, *Jakarta Daily Mail*, *Gelora Indonesia*, *Berita Republik*, *Harian Ibukota*, *Obor Revolusi Indonesia* and *Api Revolusi* also carried

various articles under different banners including "Premier Kim Il Sung comes today. All people welcome with pleasure" and "Public organizations of our country welcome the hero of the northern country".

In an editorial "Welcome to the prominent leader of the Korean people" the newspaper *Warta Bakti* wrote: "We warmly welcome His Excellency Premier Kim Il Sung, creator of the *Chollima* era of Democratic Korea and outstanding leader of the heroic Korean people." and continued.

"Today the name of democratic Korea symbolizes the defeat of U.S. imperialism to the peoples of all countries of the world and means a brilliant banner symbolizing victory of self-reliance. In this meaning he is not only the outstanding leader of the Korean people but also the outstanding leader of the peoples of all countries of Asia, Africa, Latin America and the rest of the world."

The newspaper added: "We extend warm congratulations to His Excellency Premier Kim Il Sung, the great leader of the heroic country". "We wish the golden bridge of friendship of the peoples of Indonesia and Korea would be ever-lasting like evergreen pine tree."

Harian Pos Kota ran an editorial reading:

"Premier Kim Il Sung, the great leader of the Korean people the Indonesian people have waited for day and night and the hero who defeated U.S. imperialism has arrived in Jakarta today and met us. We warmly welcome him. To the Indonesian people the beautiful name of Kim Il Sung is

incarnation of respect and reverence. His militant life and his feats in the anti-imperialist struggle, defense of peace and the cause of socialist construction are an example of our people. …We welcome you, Comrade Premier Kim Il Sung and welcome you, the hero who defeated U.S. imperialism."

Api Revolusi and *Economy National* praised him as "a close friend and heroic anti-imperialist, anti-colonialist fighter", "representative of the nation with iron-like spirit and *Chollima* spirit" and "our honoured guest" and unanimously stressed: "The visit of Marshal Kim Il Sung, Premier of the Cabinet of the DPRK inevitably strikes terror into the hearts of the imperialists. We sincerely chant: 'Welcome to the beloved friend.' Please receive our highest tribute and compliments!"

All these were the greatest welcome unprecedented in the history of Indonesia. Jakarta cheered like an eruption of a volcano.

It was Kim Jong Il who was more impressed and pleased than anybody else by the enthusiastic welcome of our people. Looking towards the Square with endlessly erupting enthusiastic cheers, he is said to have noted: "A really enthusiastic welcome. I can see with a glance the feelings of the people of this country welcoming the leader."

The hot waves of welcome were extended to the Presidential Palace and Jakarta did not know night that day.

Friendly President, the Greatest State Guest

When the car carrying the guest of honor arrived at the Presidential Palace plowing sea of flowers of welcome, the Garuda Bhinneka Tunggal Ika "flower gate" opened wide and warmly received President Kim Il Sung. Me, my sisters and brothers, were waiting for him at the central hall of the Presidential Palace. My father introduced us to him. We offered courteous greetings to the great hero with infinite respect.

He patted us, with a beaming smile. His beaming feature like the sun that day was engraved in my heart forever that was a little girl at that time. Tens of years later I went to Pyongyang, visited the *Kumsusan* Memorial Palace (now called the *Kumsusan* Palace of the Sun) and, paying respects to President Kim Il Sung laid in state there with a red flag on him, I could not hold back tears as my heart was rending.

But that day when the whole country was in a holiday mood receiving him, how could I imagine that there would be such a day. We were just pleasant and happy. We clang to his sleeves and did not let go of him. But we had to stand on ceremony.

My father gently held us back and told him that he would stay in the guesthouse of the newly built Independence Palace. The guesthouse had been rapidly built to receive him. At that time there were already heads of state of a number of other countries in Jakarta, but none of them was stayed in the guesthouse.

My father said President Kim Il Sung was the first guest to the house and requested him to say if he had any inconvenience. Telling him about the schedule of the visit,

my father informed him that in the evening a banquet was planned in his honour, but learning that he was not well, the banquet was cancelled so that he could have a rest.

Listening to him, President Kim Il Sung said the function the host kindly prepared should not be cancelled and it would be good to do as the host side prepared as he became pleasant. His respect of the courtesy of the host side greatly pleased my father. My father gave instructions then and there to prepare the banquet as scheduled. After a while President Kim Il Sung was conducted to the guest house of the Independence Palace. He took off traveling attire and after a short rest, paid a courtesy call on my father. After the courtesy call a ceremony was held at the Independence Palace to award the Order of the Republic of Indonesia First Class to him. Awarding the supreme order of our country, my father said:

"Your Excellency is a friend of the Indonesian people and the Republic of Indonesia and my friend. Your Excellency extends active support to the struggle of the Indonesian people and thus greatly encourages us. All the successes of the Korean people in the building of the country are direct help to the struggle of the Indonesian people to build a fair and prospering society. Please receive this order in token of thanks of the peoples of our two countries."

President Kim Il Sung expressed thanks for the order. After the awarding ceremony, my father gave a grand banquet at the State Palace in his honour. At the banquet, my father made a speech full of friendly feelings.

My father said: "I don't think it necessary to talk about our people's joy and thanks in welcoming Your Excellency Premier Kim Il Sung to our country. There is no doubt that these mutual visits would further strengthen the fraternal and friendly relations between our two countries."

He continued:

"During my visit to Korea I saw and felt many things. Korea has a smaller population than our country, but she is resolutely struggling against imperialism and developing into a rich and powerful country. In Korea I could see the great successes in construction, which surprise whole humankind. Korea has much smaller population than our country, and climate is unfavorable and land is not fertile, but the people do farming well and satisfy the need for food. If my memory is not wrong, per capita food grain output in Korea exceeds 400 kilograms.

On the contrary, Indonesia has several times' larger population than Korea, land is fertile and climate is much better, but imports food. Korea also produces sufficient cloth. Korea produces cloth from stone and satisfies the need for cloth. Indonesia also has a lot of such trees and stone, but imports cloth. In Korea I saw well how the members of the Korean Children's Union were studying and living. Our ideal is socialism. Building socialism is to improve the people's living. …I think we should not feel shame, but frankly learn. I would like to stress the need to learn from a country struggling, a country working, a country building,

without resting content in work."

His words showed how much he was attracted by socialism of Korea. As far as I know at that time he visited many socialist countries, but he had never so highly praised socialism in other countries.

My father continued:

"The Indonesian people and Korean people are friends and comrade-in-arms. The peoples of our two countries are comrade-in-arms not only in the anti-imperialist struggle but also in building a new society. The visit of Your Excellency Kim Il Sung to our country and my visit to Korea are very beneficial. But it is very regretful that Your Excellency Premier Kim Il Sung cannot stay long in our country. I wish His Excellency Premier Kim Il Sung would stay a little longer."

President Kim Il Sung expressed thanks for his kind words, exchanged toasts and made a speech in reply. President Kim Il Sung expressed thanks for the grand banquet and warm hospitality and said: "The welcome at the airport and in the street, a manifestation of the warm friendship of the Indonesian people towards the Korean people, greatly impressed us, we are glad and pleased as if we met long-separated brother."

He said, the Korean people and the Indonesian people have long been linked with firm ties of friendship, and achieved liberation from the imperialist and colonialist rule through a protracted struggle. And today, too, the peoples of

the two countries are fighting together on the joint front of the anti-imperialist, anti-colonialist struggle. And he spoke highly of the struggle of our Indonesian people.

"Indonesia is the sponsor country of the Bandung Conference. I think President Soekarno and the Government of the Republic of Indonesia would make a distinguished contribution to the strengthening of the unity of the peoples of Asia, Africa and Latin America in the Bandung spirit and the celebrations of the 10th anniversary of the Bandung Conference would make a new contribution to further development true to the Bandung spirit."

His inspiring speech enjoyed thunderous applause of all the participants in the banquet. President Kim Il Sung continued his speech.

"With no amount of moves, can the imperialists stand in the way of victory of the peoples of Asia, Africa and Latin America who have risen up for national liberation and progress. The imperialists who are making desperate efforts to arrest the current of history will inevitably go to ruin and the people making a dynamic advance along the current of history will win victory.

The Korean people, together with the brave and resolute Indonesian people, will do everything in their power in the struggle for the final ruin of imperialism and new and old colonialism, and for the victory of the common cause of the world people for peace, national independence and social progress."

After he finished his speech the two leaders exchanged toasts again. Then an art performance was given. The performance of Indonesian artists at the State Palace started with the *Song of General Kim Il Sung*. It was for the first time that an art performance given in honor of the head of state of other country started with a song in his praise. In this unprecedented fact alone we could read the warm mind of the Indonesian people who greeted President Kim Il Sung as the greatest guest of honor.

At night in Jakarta

What happened at the lodgings of the Korean delegation in Jakarta on the significant day? Before leaving for the Presidential Palace for courtesy call, prudent President Kim Il Sung asked about the translation of the speech to be made at the banquet, saying, the host had prepared the welcoming functions sincerely and so we should also prepare the functions well.

He worried if the speech had not been translated into English instead of Indonesian. Just as he worried the speech was translated into English. He was disappointed. It is because during his visit to Korea, my father made a speech in Indonesian not in English. Thitherto he used to make speeches in English and in the discussion with the Korean side, too, it was agreed that he would make speech in English.

But on arrival at the Pyongyang Airport he was moved by the warm welcome and after a pause, changed the plan and

said he would make speech in the mother tongue Indonesian, not in English as planned. President Kim Il Sung agreed with him. As a result, my father made his first speech in Korea in Indonesian. He also spoke in Indonesian at the 100,000-strong Pyongyang City Mass Meeting held in his honor.

He said before the Korean people warmly welcoming them, he should make speech in Korean to respected Kim Il Sung, but he was sorry that he did not know Korean, and spoke in Indonesian. If he had to speak in English for an unavoidable reason he begged pardon.

When President Kim Il Sung gave the grand banquet in honour of my father, he expressed thanks to him for his kind and warm encouraging speech, and said:

"We are sorry that here I have to use neither our language nor your language, but language of other country. It is because I do not know Korean and you do not know Indonesian."

But a better language is not spoken by word but language from the heart, he said and added, my heart is speaking to you, my heart is filled with attachment and love for you.

Remembering what happened at that time, President Kim Il Sung, after a pause, said: "Why did you organize work that way, though you know President Soekarno wants the speech to be translated into Indonesian. It is wrong that, while preparing the speech to be made at the airport in Indonesian, the speech for the banquet was not translated into Indonesian."

He proposed leaving immediately without translating

the speech into Indonesian as there is not time. Consoling the perplexed officials, he said he would personally say to the host that this time the speech would be interpreted in English as the translation had not been prepared.

Back at the guest house that evening President Kim Il Sung summed up the activities that day before the suite members and said:

"We must never rest content, but think we have things to learn from other country and take home anything helpful to our country even a little. Indonesia, too, has many things we should learn. So we should not be indifferent to anything."

Being such a man, next day President Kim Il Sung, feasting his eyes on a full view of the Jakarta port seen through the window of the special plane flying to Bandung, said in a serious tone:

"The Jakarta Port seems to have been built on a larger scale and in better order than the Leningrad Port. Our *Chongjin* Port has not been built well. In the future the port should be built well and our technicians must come and see this port."

When he went to the Korean Embassy in Jakarta a few days later, he repeatedly paid attention to the Jakarta Port, and said, he wants to look round it by car, but has no time, and technicians should go and see it. Sincere respect of the opposite side and sincere frankness is an important aspect of the noble personality of the great man President Kim Il Sung.

Here is another episode on such his personality.

This happened on the evening he arrived in Jakarta. Discussing on his meals, accompanying officials said they could not leave the work to the Indonesians alone. Learning it, President Kim Il Sung said:

"If we do not leave cooking and service to the Indonesians, they would think we do not believe in them. Then how can we be friendly?"

He was such a man.

"Young Commander"

During President Kim Il Sung's visit to our country, the accompanying officials of the Korean delegation spent very busy days as all suite members accompanying heads of state during their foreign visit do. But who was busier than anybody else was leader Kim Jong Il who came to Indonesia in the capacity of "guard officer".

In the afternoon of the first day of the visit he was very busy assisting President Kim Il Sung in his external activities such as courtesy call, order-awarding ceremony, banquet and appreciation of art performance, but he took time and met the Korean ambassador to Indonesia, received a report on his work, gave precious instructions and gave guidance concerning all work of the delegation.

That night, he met the Foreign Minister at the guest house and said: "I am very much pleased that the leader has recovered health and arrived in Indonesia in safe." and expressed satisfaction, saying "Seeing the Indonesian people

enthusiastically welcoming the leader today, I am feeling my fatigue of long journey was relieved at once."

He continued to say: "Today is an unforgettable significant and pleasant day. It is like a holiday. We should inform the homeland of the welcome of the Indonesian people warmer than the hot wind of the equator as soon as possible."

And he stressed the necessity of organizing work scrupulously so that there should be no mistake in attending on the leader, and departed for the Embassy to send the news of the leader's arrival to the homeland.

An official of the Embassy who visited the Bandung International Post Office and requested for connection with Pyongyang, told him that they had test telephone communication with the homeland several times before President's visit to Indonesia. Listening to him, Kim Jong Il appreciated the efforts of all members of the Embassy.

After a while telephone was connected with Pyongyang. He informed the homeland of the President's arrival in detail and gave instructions to inform the cadres, party members and the entire people of the news of the grand functions that day.

Past mid-night, the night of equator deepened amid excitement and emotion. Kim Jong Il did not take rest, but came to the guesthouse, looked round the rooms of the suite members and accompanying officials and visited the lodgings of the artists and airmen. His busy activities of a day were associated with the duty of "a guard officer".

He kept vigil for the well being of President Kim Il Sung. At the unforgettable deep night, a map was on his desk on

which Bandung City was marked with a circle drawn with a red pencil. He was planning to ride 200 kilometers by car to Bandung when the day breaks.

At that time, the Indonesian side had two plans concerning President Kim Il Sung's visit to Bandung, that is, to go by plane or by car, and asked the Korean side which would be better.

Learning about it, Kim Jong Il said, we cannot make a hasty conclusion without going there and made his mind to travel the 200-kilometre road by car. Indonesian high-ranking security officials accompanied him. Aboard the running car, he acquainted himself in detail with the state of road, surrounding layout of land, big and small residential quarters and the like.

He is said to have said that day: "We should go any long way if it is for the well-being of the great leader. It is the elementary duty and task for us soldiers to tread in advance on the road to be taken by the leader. You and I, all of us should be his guards. The well-being of the leader is that of our people, that of our Party and that of our Korea."

I think President Kim Il Sung with such "a guard officer" under him was really happy. Next day he drove 200 kilometers to Bandung and concluded it would be good for the President to use plane, saying travel by car is not sure. His intention was informed to Indonesian officials. They were surprised. Who is the man who drove 200 kilometers at a run in the early morning, understood the locality and made a resolute and clear-cut conclusion?

The protocol officials and guards of my father asked the Korean officials time and again who he is, but the Koreans only smiled and just said he is "our young commander" and no more. But it was certain that he was not a common person, but an outstanding and extraordinary man.

Reported of it, my father said: "as His Excellency Kim Il Sung is a great man born of the Heaven, 'the young commander' under him also must be a great man and told his assistants to do their best for the security of His Excellency Kim Il Sung like "the young commander".

Didn't my father know who "the young commander" was? My father consistently paid deep attention for the Indonesian officials to ensure security as intended by "the young commander" and on the way to Bandung personally commanded the guarding. The Korean officials, who were in the Bandung Airport as advance party, were confused.

As far as they knew, the special plane of the President carrying the two persons had to arrive first, but the plane carrying the suite members touched down first. What happened with the special plane? Dumb-founded, they sent a man to the control tower of the airport and called the embassy.

That time "the young commander" came to them and said, "The special plane carrying the leader is flying as scheduled. Soon the plane will arrive at Bandung Airport at appointed time."

He already knew that according to the instructions of my father the special plane changed the course to touch down

later than the other plane. On the 200-kilometre land road "the young commander" commanded and on the airline, my father personally commanded the guard work. As a result the guard of President Kim Il Sung was perfect.

An Auspicious Event in Bandung

April 11, 1965. It was a holiday in Bandung. Kim Il Sung was visiting Bandung, the capital of West Java Province that day. Bandung was known to the world for the Bandung Conference and widely renowned as a summer resort, but never before was it so much astir with ecstasy as the day. Bandung City proclaimed that day an official day-off as Jakarta did on the previous day and decorated streets and the people wore holiday best. Portraits of the two great leaders were hung at the Hussein Sastranergara Airport in the suburbs of Bandung and seen under them were gold letters: "Welcome to Respected Comrade Premier and his party to Bandung!"

High-ranking officials from the capital and locality were present at the airport together with thousands of welcomers in their holiday best. We, his daughters, were also among them. My father told us to go there in advance and receive the honored guests.

At 10.30 a.m. the special plane carrying the two leaders touched down at the airport and the welcomers warmly welcomed the guest from far-off country, chanting: "Long live His Excellency Premier Kim Il Sung!", "Long live Korea!" in Korean.

That day in Bandung enveloped in joy and emotion like on holiday, the celebrations culminated in his presence in the Indonesian Provisional People's Consultative Conference. It was an unprecedented privilege enjoyed by no head of state of other countries visiting our country.

My father had invited President Kim Il Sung to the conference. President Kim Il Sung declined, saying, I am a guest, on what ground would I participate in the conference discussing the internal affairs of your country. But my father invited him repeatedly, saying, the conference was called on the day of Your Excellency Premier's visit and what if the main character is absent?

To have him at the conference, my father waited for him, postponing the opening of the conference twice. So his presence at the conference was a thing he could not renounce at all. President Kim Il Sung understood my father's intention and said he would participate as an observer.

As a result, he attended the Indonesian Provisional People's Consultative Conference. When he entered the Conference Hall conducted by my father, all the participants rose and warmly welcomed him with deafening applause. The two leaders took specially prepared seats and the conference was declared open. The chairman said it is for the first time in history that President Kim Il Sung participated in the Indonesian Provisional People's Consultative Conference as the head of state of other country.

Then my father made a policy speech, which is known as "change of orientation" in Indonesia.

My father first said: "Present here is His Excellency respected Premier Kim Il Sung, the famous creator of self-reliance and bold and successful builder of an independent economy." He proposed welcoming him with loud applause.

The moment thunderous applause burst out again. In the important policy speech that day my father dwelt on the struggle of the peoples of Asia, Africa and Latin America against imperialism and new and old colonialism and said that the Indonesian people must fully understand and that they were in the vortex of the struggle against new colonialism, colonialism and imperialism, and added: "Until imperialism is completely cleared of the surface of the earth, we must continue offensives against new colonialism, colonialism and imperialism on their lifeline and make the lifeline of imperialism the death line of imperialism."

The keynote in his speech that day is that Indonesia should make a "change of orientation" to the road of economic independence and for it, hold high the slogan of "self-reliance".

He said what is important in better understanding the demand and aspiration of the Indonesian revolution is to change the international development plan in line with the demand of the present stage of the development of revolution and build an independent national economy. He said, in order to build an independent democracy we should lay the foundation of an independent economy of the nation and, without an independent economy, we can neither be independent, nor build the country nor live.

My father said: "During my visit to Korea I received a gift of clothes made with the cloth produced from stone from His Excellency respected Premier Kim Il Sung and I am keeping it at home up to now as an expression of respect and reverence for him. He called for building an independent national economy as in Korea and achieving complete freedom in the economic field."

He said the presence of His Excellency Premier Kim Il Sung in this conference will be a great encouragement to the Indonesian people aspiring after the construction of an independent economy.

It represented the sincerity of my father who had called for learning from the achievements, experiences and idea of President Kim Il Sung. This happened at the guesthouse during my father's visit to Korea. He summoned all the suite members, informed them of his talks with President Kim Il Sung and asked about their impressions. All present unanimously said Korea is great.

Satisfied with their words, he said: "Look. Is socialism of Korea not good? Is it not good to be independent? Now you should not oppose socialism. We should also go along the road of independence. To do so we must learn from Korea. We should learn from His Excellency Premier Kim Il Sung. In his speech that day my father repeated the word "*Juche*" in Korean four times and proudly said, the "change of orientation" I say means strengthening of "*Juche*" in Indonesia.

I think my father is the first head of state of other country, who used the word of "*Juche*" in Korean at an official

occasion, saying, "*Juche*" cannot be expressed otherwise and so it should be used as it is, in respect of the *Juche* idea of President Kim Il Sung. I am proud of it.

During his visit to Korea, my father was completely convinced of the validity and vitality of the "Korean way" and firmly believed that self-reliance in the Korean way is the only way to realize economic independence.

That is why, calling for a change of orientation from dependent economy to independent economy, my father could so resolutely declare: "…Let us fundamentally turn the wheel and fundamentally turn the rudder."

It is said that after hearing my father's speech, President Kim Il Sung said:

"The contents of the speech of Soekarno, President of the Republic of Indonesia at the Third Provisional People's Consultative Conference today are excellent."

The news of President Kim Il Sung's visit to Bandung and participation in the Third Session of the Provisional People's Consultative Conference of the Republic of Indonesia evoked great sensation at home and abroad. The newspaper *Obor Revolusi Indonesia* wrote: "On April 11, Bandung City witnessed two glorious great events. That day the Third Provisional People's Consultative Conference was declared open…, and His Excellency Premier Kim Il Sung, one of the leaders of the peoples of the new-emerging nations visited this city."

The newspaper *Berita Republik* ran an article titled: "The Provisional People's Consultative Conference has the honour to receive His Excellency Premier Kim Il Sung. 661

members welcome the hero of new-emerging forces with a warm applause". It commented that "Visit of His Excellency Premier Kim Il Sung, his participation in the Session of the Provisional People's Consultative Conference, in particular is really an important historic event."

After participation in the conference, President Kim Il Sung visited downtown Bandung. Hundreds of thousand citizens turned out in the street, chanted hurrah and sang the "Song of General Kim Il Sung" in Korean, and various musical instruments and drums struck music.

After visiting the city he returned to the Provincial Office, when delegates of Pramuka tied Pramuka ties around his neck and presented him a Pramuka cap. My father and Governor of the Province gave a banquet in the joint name and the Governor made a speech in honor of him on a visit to Bandung. In the speech, the Governor expressed his desire to visit Korea.

President Kim Il Sung invited him and accepted his request with pleasure. That evening a performance was given at the Dwikora House of Culture in his honor, and after the performance personages of broad sections, different institutions and organizations in Bandung presented sincere gifts to him.

His visit to Bandung was a significant event unprecedented in the history of the proud city.

Bogor Where Kimilsungia came into being

The next day, April 12, President Kim Il Sung left Bandung for Bogor. Bogor is 160 kilometres from Bandung. Most of

the region was a rugged mountain thick with virgin tropical jungle, but warm welcoming cheers were endless. People ran out of the houses of the mountain hamlets, waving hands and women waved hands through threaded hanging tropical fruits.

They welcomed the honoured guests, chanting: "Hidup Korea!", "Hidup Korea!"

Tall palm trees bearing round fruits, cocoa trees as tall as the palms, banana plants laden with appetizing fruits, mango trees with thick branches, and bamboos also were rustling in breeze as if singing of the joy of the day.

Looking round at the thriving tropical woods with interest, President Kim Il Sung said Indonesia has rich raw materials of paper including bamboo and if they are used, the country would be a rich country to be envied by others in the near future.

My father said it is true that natural resources are rich, but he is not a great man to meet the expectation of the people.

President Kim Il Sung said:

"The popular masses create history, but there must be a man to lead them, and it is wrong to negate the role of the leader. For self-reliance, machine-building industry should be built, and when machine-building industry is built the country can be industrialized. When we built machine-building industry first in my country some people slandered and opposed it, saying, 'Does rice come out from machines?' But we built machine-building industry."

The validity of his line and policy is clearly proved by the present reality of *Songun* or army-first policy-guided Korea, which is building a prosperous nation, on the basis of latest science and technology in all fields developing space technology with its own strength and launching man-made earth satellites despite the isolation and suffocation moves of the enemy and developing not only nuclear technology but also nuclear-fusion technology. My father fully supported him and said developed countries and big powers do not like other countries to develop technology in order to sell their commodities.

President Kim Il Sung agreed with him. While they were having meaningful talk, the motorcade ran fast, without lowering the speed. But my father had the motorcade take a short rest from time to time on the way so that President Kim Il Sung should not feel tired.

My sisters and I accompanied them and when they dropped in at the Cipanas Palace, my father also joined the welcomers' dance to the pleasure of the guests. The guests also took a brief rest at the Riung Gunung the breast of the Puncak Pass. Chatting with my father, President Kim Il Sung feasted his eyes on the vast plains of West Java.

Bogor city was in hailing distance between Gede and Salak Volcanoes. Leaving Riung Gunung we found tea-picking girls at the tea garden at the foot of surrounding hills welcoming the guests, waving their shawls, and in the fields, rice-transplanting farmers chanting "Hidup! Hidup!" on one side

and rice-harvesting farmers on the other side loudly chanting: "Korea, Kim Il Sung!", "Bung Karno, Kim Il Sung!"

The motorcade arrived in Bogor. Bogor is said to have thunders for 320 days a year, but when President Kim Il Sung came, it was fine without thunder. President Kim Il Sung was conducted into the Bogor Palace amid enthusiastic cheers of the citizens in the street. My father had never taken the head of state of any other country to that place. But that day he took President Kim Il Sung to the Palace for him to relieve his fatigue from a long journey even for a while. In the Palace there was a bronze statue of a man on running horseback.

My father, pointing to the statue said to President Kim Il Sung that he had set up the "bronze statue of *Chollima*" as he loved Korea. At the dinner that evening, too, he expressed admiration for Korea and respect for President Kim Il Sung, saying, Korea has many things extraordinary, buildings are extraordinary and so are the people and spirit.

President Kim Il Sung said he was pleased with the good feelings and my father said to him that he would give pleasure to him, singing and dancing. That evening artists of the two countries gave performance at the Palace.

The items of the performance Indonesian songs and dances and *Mungyong* Pass, *Song of Spring*, *Ongheya*" and other Korean dances and songs.

The artists of the two countries also sang songs of the leaders *Song of General Kim Il Sung* and *Bung Karno Siapa Yang Punya*.

My father joined dance to please President Kim Il Sung

and my sister danced a folk dance. She rehearsed the dance for months to show to him. President Kim Il Sung was pleased to see her dance and clapped hands with a bright smile. At that time nobody imagined that the girl student, my sister later would become the first woman President of the Republic of Indonesia and visit the *Kumsusan* Palace of the Sun in Pyongyang where President Kim Il Sung is laid in state and write in the guest book.

The soiree overflowing with friendly feelings came to close late at night. The significant day of birth of Kimilsungia well-known as a world's famous flower today was breaking slowly.

***

It was April 13. That day my father took President Kim Il Sung to the Bogor Botanical Gardens well-known as "Flower Garden of Indonesia". The visit was not a ceremony for the head of state of other country but an event my father had prepared to show to him a rare flower bred with utmost sincerity for his closest friend and comrade-in-arms President Kim Il Sung.

"Your Excellency's visit to the Bogor Botanical Gardens is the greatest event, the first of its kind in our botanical garden with more than one hundred years' history. We warmly welcome Your Excellency's visit to this botanical garden." said Soedjana Kassan, the Director of the Botanical Garden Gt the entrance and received President Kim Il Sung and his party with pleasure. The Director conducted the guests first

to the open-air arboretum, briefing them on the botanical garden.

The Bogor Botanical Gardens officially opened in 1817 is a treasure of Indonesia with a long history, a pride of Bogor and a pride of Indonesia. The visitors were first attracted by a triangular pond at the entrance, and onibas with large leaves covering the surface. The Director said the average diameter of the onibas leaf is 1.5 metres and some are three metres. Past the entrance there were woods of tropical plants including huge cactuses, thick bamboos and other 20-30 metres tall trees. Director Kassan said it is the open-air arboretum of the botanical garden. The Director said the botanical garden covers 85 hectares, the arboretum has more than 10,000 kinds of tropical plants and the varieties of banana alone exceed 200, and the botanical garden has more than 750,000 botanical samples.

Listening to the explanation, President Kim Il Sung nodded with a smile. It is said that looking around the botanical garden with interest, "the young commander" said, "It is natural for the Indonesians to boast of this botanical garden, we should learn such a thing and we also should build up the botanical garden well."

Sometimes herds of frolicking deer would approach him. "The young commander" looked at the deer with a smile and said, it is very good as the deer add beauty to the landscape.

After looking round the open-air arboretum, President Kim Il Sung and "the young commander" visited the flower

garden of the Bogor Botanical Gardens where various kinds of flowers were growing in a green house.

Kassan told President Kim Il Sung that in the flower garden over 80,000 flowers of more than 2,000 species including fragrant orchid were growing. In the charming flower garden large variety of fresh beautiful flowers in full bloom were welcoming the guests. Of them beautiful orchids were really fantastic.

Conducted by my father President Kim Il Sung enjoyed the orchids. Kassan said to him that Indonesians specially love the orchids and they say they are born among orchids and die among them. Listening to the explanation he walked slowly and suddenly stopped before a rarely beautiful orchid. The deep pink colour of the flower was unique and the shape most beautiful and noble, the drooping flowers were graceful and the knots seemed firm, and green stalk was also attractive. It was so beautiful that visitors were reluctant to leave.

With a bright smile, President Kim Il Sung fingered the petals and said the flower was really beautiful and fragrant. Botanist C.L. Bundt who was specialized in orchid for 30 years had bred the flower and sent it with only stalk and leaves to his comrade-in-arms Soedjana Kassan, Director of the Botanical Garden, another botanist also specialized in orchids, requesting him to bring it into beautiful bloom and show it to President Kim Il Sung who had come a long way.

It was their common warm desire to bring it into full bloom when the great guest of Korea, a country of heroes, the country of *Chollima* came. It was also a special instruction

President Soekarno had given to Soedjana Kassan.

Kassan had done his best with all efforts and wisdom to bring the flower into bloom in time, shelving all other work. As a result, as his comrade-in-arms wished, as he himself wished and as instructed by the President, he could show him the full-blown flower, neither fading nor in bud, a fresh, luxurious and fragrant beautiful flower.

President Kim Il Sung highly appreciated the flower grown so sincerely, saying it is really beautiful and fragrant. Shedding tears with infinite joy and emotion, Soedjana Kassan explained about the flower. The plant comes into bloom twice a year. Once it opens, it remains in bloom 2~3 months. And it is a unique one that it grows well even it is hung in the air if the root is wrapped in moss as it absorbs nutrients from air. President Kim Il Sung praised the horticulturists on their successes in research, saying: It that true? Thank you very much for showing so excellent flower. Thinking it was time, my father said to him what he had discussed and decided with deep consideration.

"Your Excellency respected Premier Kim Il Sung, your idea is great and you are moving the world. It means that Your Excellency has the whole world. So we would like to name this beautiful rare flower after Your Excellency and call it Kimilsungia."

President Kim Il Sung said:

"Is it necessary to name even a flower after me, as I have done nothing special? There is no need to do so."

Infinitely modest President Kim Il Sung declined. But my father did not concede. The resolve of my father to name the rare flower, the first of its kind in the world after a great man and present it to him was neither made for a few days nor then and there.

Since he invited him to our country, since he was thinking how to receive him in Jakarta, unable to sleep in the guesthouse in Pyongyang, he thought and thought of what kind of gift he should present to him. After return home, too, he thought of it all the time, after his visit was confirmed he discussed it with government officials as an official agenda item.

Many officials presented various proposals, but none of them satisfied him. Shortly after liberation of Korea, Generalissimo Stalin of the Soviet Union had presented him with a latest de luxe bullet-proof car (it is exhibited in the International Friendship Exhibition House on Mt. *Myohyang* in Korea) as gift and China set up his bronze statue in that country which is a thing unprecedented in her history.

But my father wanted to honour him as the leaders of the two big powers had done, nay, he wanted to present him with a more significant and more valuable gift.

One day after his return home from Korea, my father expressed his desire to give a valuable gift to President Kim Il Sung, saying: "During my visit to Korea, I got infinite vigor and refreshment from His Excellency Kim Il Sung. During my visit to Korea, His Excellency Kim Il Sung brought home to me the true meaning of self-reliance and gave me *Chollima*.

The spirit of *Chollima* is not a simple symbol of strength and feats which decorated an era of history, but a valuable wealth not only to Korea but also to our Indonesian people."

He pondered over and over with so warm a mind, and an inspiration flashed across his mind like lightning. It was to name Indonesia's most beautiful flower after him and present it to him.

My father visited the Bogor Botanical Gardens without delay. He had frequented the Botanical Garden near the Bogor Palace used as Presidential Palace. Therefore he was well aware of the Director of the Botanical Garden and its general affairs. One day he had heard Director Soedjana Kassan say about the unique orchid bred by Bundt. My father immediately visited the Botanical Garden to learn about the flower.

That day he learned about the request made to Kassan by botanist Bunt who had bred the flower in Makassar of Sulawesi Island and sent it to the Botanical Garden. My father slapped his knee. The botanists' mind was the very same with his. Water flows along its course and joins the sea. He was glad that his mind was identical with that of the flower breeders. But he did not reveal this thought and asked to the Director.

"Mr. Director, what is the name of this flower?"

"Your Excellency President, it has no name yet."

"Why not?"

"Your Excellency President, it is difficult to breed a flower,

but it seems more difficult to name it. I would be happy if you give me a valuable advice when you are here."

With a smile, my father said: "Once I have come here, I would like to hear an explanation of the flower. I have time today."

He thought he should know about the valuable flower first. He heard a specific explanation about the precious orchid of a new variety bred by Bundt. The flower was a very rare flower which can be considered the acme of evolution technically and morphologically, which was made in the course of crossing four wild original species, one variety and ten artificial hybrids.

Kassan gave a specific explanation about the evolution and distribution of the orchids, about the evolution and distribution of a genus of them, and about the cymbidium orchid called "Lausan pinca", a plant of which was sold at the price of 4,500 US dollars in America in 1952 and thus was registered in the Guinness Records.

Having attentively heard the explanations, my father said to Kassan:

"What if this flower is named after His Excellency Kim Il Sung who will come to our country as the most honoured state guest and present it to him? It is the purpose of my unannounced visit to the Bogor Botanical Gardens today."

The moment Kassan's face beamed brightly.

"If this flower is named Kimilsungia as Your Excellency President proposed and presented to him, there would be no

greater pleasure. The minds of all people in Indonesia will be the same with your desire."

Satisfied with his words, my father said:

"Can you bring the flower into full bloom around forthcoming April 15? It is the birth anniversary of His Excellency Kim Il Sung celebrated by the world."

So my father did not concede as President Kim Il Sung declined. He said once again:

"Don't say so. Respected Your Excellency has performed great feats for humanity. You should enjoy great honour."

The Director of the Botanical Garden also said he sincerely wishes to name the flower after His Excellency Premier and call it Kimilsungia.

My father supported him with applause and said to the Director to complete the cultivation technology as early as possible so that he can grow it well at his residence and present it to His Excellency Premier as gift. But he felt something empty.

As President Kim Il Sung declined, he could not do it as he wished in view of diplomatic etiquette, no matter how ardent he may be to name the flower after him. At that time a good idea crossed his mind. He thought it would be smoothly solved if he requests it to "the young commander" because "the young commander" exercised absolute authority in dealing with all problems including security affairs.

Upon his return to Jakarta that evening my father wanted

the Director for Protocol and gave instructions.

"The problem on naming the flower after His Excellency Kim Il Sung must be discussed again. April 15 is his birth anniversary. We must solve the problem on naming it Kimilsungia without condition. So it must be presented to 'the young commander'. Lost gold can be discovered, but if we miss this moment, we cannot recover."

"I understand the intention of Your Excellency President," replied Kassan.

So the Director for Protocol of the Presidential Palace met Ho Tam who was assisting "the young commander" as Vice-Minister of Foreign Affairs of Korea and conveyed the intention of President Soekarno. Ho Tam remembered what had happened at the Bogor Palace in the daytime and his heart warmed up. After the visit to the botanical garden, my father gave a luncheon at the Bogor Palace in honour of President Kim Il Sung. After the luncheon President Kim Il Sung and "the young commander" took a brief rest at the lounge.

Ho Tam and other suite members said the orchid President Kim Il Sung praised as a beautiful flower, was really a rare beautiful flower. Agreeing with them, President Kim Il Sung said the flower introduced by President Soekarno was very beautiful.

"The young commander" reminded him of the fact that President Soekarno was pleased when President Kim Il Sung highly praised it and he proposed naming it "Kimilsungia".

It was a request to accept the intention of my father. But President Kim Il Sung changed the topics and said, the botanical garden has been well built up and President Soekarno has reason to show it.

"The young commander" said to him again that my father had already visited the botanical garden and met the botanists, and instructed them to bring the beautiful flower into bloom when he would visit Indonesia and that my father had proposed naming the newly bred flower after him.

But President Kim Il Sung changed topics again and said about the art performance last evening. As a result, "the young commander" also could not realize his intention as my father, and returned to Jakarta. But "the young commander" was resolved not to renounce the naming of "Kimilsungia".

When he had seen the flower at the botanical garden, he had understood its value immediately and, warmly accepting my father's sincerity, said: "Really the flower is especially beautiful. The more we see the more beautiful it is. It is so beautiful as to satisfy the leader."

He said to the suite members, today we cannot take the flower home, as its cultivation technology has not been perfected yet, but let us grow it in the homeland. Please tell the Director of the Botanical Garden that we would take the flower when its cultivation technology is completed.

Recalling that, Ho Tam went to "the young commander" immediately to convey the intention of my father he heard from the Director for Protocol. "The young commander" attentively heard him, nodding repeatedly and went to the

room of President Kim Il Sung. The President received him with pleasure, but seemed to understand his purpose.

When an official presented the issue of flower just before, he prevented him from speaking of it any more, saying: It is not an important matter to speak repeatedly. It would be all right to ignore such a problem.

"The young commander" knew it all, but said to the President sincerely and courteously again, it was determined earlier and prepared long that today President Soekarno proposed naming the flower after the leader and it represents not only the desire of President Soekarno and the Indonesian people but also the unanimous wish of the progressive people of the whole world.

After listening to him, President Kim Il Sung said, our country once nameless on the world map, is now admired and praised by the world people as great successes have been made in the revolution and construction, and if the desire of President Soekarno and the Indonesian people is so earnest I can accept the proposal as a manifestation of praise of the Korean people rather than myself.

The day registered as the day of birth of a famous flower named after the great man in the long human history, the world history of flowers was April 13, 1965. The birth of Kimilsungia was a pride of the Indonesian people, an honor of the Korean people and happiness of the revolutionary people of the world aspiring after independence. It was a botanist who bred the flower, but those who gave birth to the flower as glorious Kimilsungia were the "young commander" and my respected

father Soekarno, the father of the Indonesian people.

***

On the significant day, my father invited him to the welcome meeting of schoolchildren of Bogor city. The meeting was held in the garden of the Bogor Palace. Guided by my father, President Kim Il Sung, together with "the young commander" went out to the balcony of the Palace where rostrum had been prepared, when more than 5,000 schoolchildren raised hands in salute.

President Kim Il Sung, together with my father, waved hands towards them and sent warm greetings. Then 5,000 children sang the immortal revolutionary hymn *Song of General Kim Il Sung* in Korean, looking up to the respected great man. They also sang *Halo Halo Bandung* and other Indonesian songs.

We, three sisters also sang with the children and clapped hands towards him. Lovely pretty children merrily sang, clapping hands, beating time with feet and moving bodies, and President Kim Il Sung clapped hands with a beaming smile on his face as if all fatigue was relieved. "The young commander" said something to the officials beside him with an air of satisfaction.

I learned on this opportunity that that time "the young commander" said the songs of the children were not confused, but soft and pleasant like folksong and suit the feelings of Koreans. Especially he admired the excellent performance of the monotone bamboo percussion instruments by the

children and said that would be difficult, but the children perform the instruments well and conducting is also good.

He said, the Indonesian people have prepared well, it is clear that great efforts have been made; it would need great efforts to produce a perfect harmonious sound by combining the sounds of such different instruments. They have made sincere preparations for the guests.

After the performance my father made a speech:

"Schoolchildren, now we are spending pleasant days since Comrade Premier Kim Il Sung has come to Indonesia. We can become a rich and powerful country and a powerful nation only when we struggle stubbornly with iron will and spirit, and with ardent desire. When I speak about the spirit of the Korean people, it includes the revolutionary spirit of all the youth and children. All youth and children of Korea are full of revolutionary spirit. The Korean people are, in a word, high-spirited, and their spirit is that of *Chollima*.

Korea is a smaller country than Indonesia in population, but has rapidly developed into a powerful country the imperialists fear. It is because the Korean people have waged a stubborn struggle in the spirit of *Chollima*.

Now *Chollima* of Korea is flying through the sky like lightning. We have to become a powerful and prosperous nation. You must not forget that the symbol of our nation is 'Garuda'. 'Garuda' is a bird that can fly high into the sky. I wish the entire Indonesian people, first of all the youth and children to live with great strength and spirit like 'Garuda'.

Schoolchildren. Now father Kim Il Sung will make a valuable speech for you."

Cheers burst out again.

Stamping their feet, the children raised enthusiastic cheers of hurrah again and again. The enthusiasm of the innocent children was so impressive that nobody could see carelessly. Waving his hand to the endlessly cheering restless children, President Kim Il Sung composedly began speech.

"Beloved schoolchildren! Teachers of the schoolchildren! I would like to express thanks to you for this warm and enthusiastic welcome. I think the feeling you express to us are feelings expressed to our schoolchildren. You have sung very well. Your song is run through with love for the fatherland and people, and the spirit of opposing imperialism and building a new society without exploitation.

The day before yesterday Bung Karno made a speech at the Provincial People's Consultative Conference. His speech has good contents, that is, excellent contents on fighting against imperialism and colonialism, on building a new society without exploitation and oppression. I believe you, schoolchildren, would realize the excellent idea of father Bung Karno. In fact, future belongs to you.

We are now struggling for the new generations like you. I hope you will become revolutionary soldiers of Bung Karno, reliable reserves of revolution to realize the revolutionary idea of the entire Indonesian people. I wish you would study hard, accumulate rich knowledge, do sports activities well

and become personnel with excellent morality. Back home we will convey the warm feelings you have just expressed to the schoolchildren of our country."

His speech was interrupted several times by a warm applause. His speech was followed by a march of the schoolchildren. They marched by the rostrum to the tune of the *Song of General Kim Il Sung* and extended warm congratulations.

The meaningful meeting that day had been prepared by my father with special attention. For the function that day he let them rehearse the *Song of General Kim Il Sung* for several months and encouraged them to study hard to greet father Kim Il Sung with good results in study.

Sending them to the function, their parents let them sing the song and told them time and again to sing with correct words and tune. They also told them to listen to the speech of father Kim Il Sung attentively and become excellent personnel.

What energy my father devoted to the reception of President Kim Il Sung is well proved by his joke in the run up to the day of his arrival that nowadays I am busier with the work of the State Guest Reception Committee than the work of the President. The grand welcome function of the children in Bogor was one of the significant events showing such sincerity of my father.

Significant meeting, significant special lecture

During his sojourn in Indonesia, President Kim Il Sung not only strengthened friendship between the two countries,

but also convinced the Indonesian people of the strength and potentialities of Indonesia to walk on its feet. Typical examples are his talk with high-ranking officials of Indonesia and his lecture at the "Ali Archam" Academy of Social Sciences on April 14, the day after his return from Bogor to Jakarta.

That morning he laid a wreath at the Kalibata Heroes Cemetery in the suburbs of Jakarta and returned to the guesthouse. At the guest house he received the Second Deputy Prime Minister Leimena and other high-ranking Indonesian officials. It was a significant meeting in the form of a courtesy call of high-ranking Indonesian officials specially organized by my father as an expression of respect and love for President Kim Il Sung and greatest sincerity for the honoured guest.

Second Deputy Prime Minister Leimena, on behalf of the officials, offered courteous greetings to President Kim Il Sung and asked if he had a pleasant journey on the long road from Bandung to Jakarta. With a bright smile, President Kim Il Sung said, I have got very good impressions on the journey, many people came out to the road and warmly welcomed us, it shows the friendship between the peoples of the two countries.

He further said, "Indonesia is a rich country, there are many fruit trees, rubber trees and tea plants, and cotton grows well, houses are nice and the people are well-clad. On the way I found your country well-irrigated and rural construction done well along the 200-kilometre distance from Bandung to Jakarta, he said and noted that when

chemical fertilizers are produced in large quantities in the future, Indonesia will be rich in rice."

He further said, "It is good that Indonesia has vast land, President Soekarno said there is no problem even if the population is 200 million-250 million, more population also will not present any problem as there are foods, there are marine resources and the underground resources have not yet been prospected all."

Leimena told him that only 15 percent of the territorial resources have been prospected. President Kim Il Sung told them about the experiences in the prospecting of the underground resources in Korea, and said: "In Indonesia, too, many things will be found out, when prospecting is done well."

Leimena thanked him and said in the past the imperialists hid what they had prospected and did not tell the Indonesians about it. President Kim Il Sung said the imperialists hid and at the same time technology was lacking. He said:

"Those dispatched by the imperialists to the colonial countries were mercenaries and at that time the people did not tell them what was buried underground though they knew. The Indonesians probably did not tell the Dutch what was underground. When the Japanese asked, Koreans said there was no iron or copper in Korea."

He further said, "After liberation iron and copper were mined where the people said iron and copper had been dug, and confidently added that the situation would be the same

with Indonesia."

Admiring his clear-cut insight into the Indonesian situation, Leimena said the marine resources were also prospected only 30 per cent. But nowhere would go what is buried under the ground of their country.

President Kim Il Sung said it would not be difficult to feed the people as Indonesia has a lot of resources, and continued: "It is also simple to solve the clothing issue in Indonesia. 8 metres of cloth per capita would be enough. Short sleeves and trousers will do for children."

He considered the natural and climatic conditions and national costumes of our tropical country. "But in Korea clothes should be changed according to seasons, and different caps and footwear should be supplied according to seasons. So it is not easy to solve the clothing issue."

He further said: "In Indonesia fuel for heating would not be necessary as people can live without heating facilities. And as there is a lot of gas, it will be very convenient in life."

Listening to him, the Indonesian high-ranking officials felt their hearts warming up with the pride of their country Indonesia which has all t hings necessary to solve the problems of food, clothing and housing, and many advantages because of its geographical position and were convinced that they can make the people well-off with their strength. President Kim Il Sung gave valuable inspiring instructions on the building of an independent industry in Indonesia.

He asked if Indonesia had iron ore.

The Second Deputy Prime Minister Leimena proudly

said Indonesia has not only iron ore but also tin, bauxite, gold, oil, diamond, coal, uranium and many other things.

President Kim Il Sung was satisfied with his explanation.

"You should produce iron by yourselves. How powerful a country is determined by the iron output of that country. As Indonesia has petroleum and gas, it will be easy to produce steel. Steel must be produced."

He said, Japan produces 36 million tons of steel. In view of 100 million population of Japan, the per capita output is 360 kilograms. It is not small amount, and emphasized: "If Indonesia works well, her industry can be independent."

It was really sincere and inspiring words. The Indonesian officials were too pleased and moved to know what to do. They all rose up and expressed thanks to him with warm applause. They saw in their minds' eyes the future of independent Indonesia, Indonesia where people are well-off, and were really grateful for his sincere wish for Indonesia.

That afternoon President Kim Il Sung gave the special lecture "On socialist construction in the Democratic People's Republic of Korea and the south Korean revolution" at the "Ali Archam" Academy of Social Sciences. The lecture had been organized according to special attention and proposal of my father.

During their talks at the Bogor Palace on the previous day modest President Kim Il Sung said to my father that he had one thing to ask about the schedule of sojourn, and according to the schedule, a friendly meeting by the Friendship Association was planned, but would it not be all

right to cancel the meeting? And a lecture is planned at the "Ali Archam" Academy of Social Sciences, of course, I can give a lecture, but I do not know well how to give it, and asked about my father's opinion.

My father said the friendly meeting can be cancelled, but it would be good to give the lecture as scheduled, and requested him to give the lecture, saying it had been demanded by the Vice-Chairman of the Provisional People's Consultative Conference.

President Kim Il Sung said he could not meet the Vice-Chairman, and proposed deciding it after meeting him.

He meant to decide after meeting the sponsor. My father said: "I did not think of that and how about calling him today."

President Kim Il Sung said smiling: "I have no objection, but I don't know how he would say, anyhow, I have time in the afternoon.

My father said, he would come when the President wants and immediately instructed his aide-de-camp to ask the Vice-Chairman in Bandung to come to Jakarta. As a result, President Kim Il Sung received the Vice-Chairman of the Provisional People's Consultative Conference at 8 p.m. the day he arrived in Jakarta and it was settled that he would give the lecture at the Railway Club as scheduled.

That day the Railway Club was packed with audience and decorated with the flags of Indonesia and the DPRK, and hung there were a model of *Chollima* and slogans "Long

live the revolutionary unity of the Indonesian people and the Korean people!" and "Long live the friendship of the peoples of Asia, Africa and Latin America!"

Many people carrying flags of the two countries and placards assembled around the club and the sidewalks of the streets linked with it and waited for President Kim Il Sung, singing the *Song of General Kim Il Sung* and *Bung Karno Siapa Yang Punya*.

Hutapea, President of the "Ali Archam" Academy of Social Sciences and Suyono Haditono, Vice-Chairman of the Supreme Advisory Council of Indonesia, guided him from the guest house. When he entered the garden of the Railway Club cheers of hurrah exploded and pretty Pramuka ran to him and hung garlands on his neck. At the lecture hall of the Club all audience rose up and warmly welcomed him with stormy cheers of hurrah.

Present there were the Vice-Chairman of the Supreme Advisory Council, Vice-Chairman of the Provisional People's Consultative Conference and other high-ranking government officials, personages of parties, public organizations and academic circles, teachers and students of the "Ali Archam" Academy of Social Sciences, foreign diplomatic representatives and embassy staff members and reporters.

The audiences were wrapped in infinite joy and excitement. President of the Academy Hutapea made a greeting address. He said the day they had the honour to listen to the lecture of Kim Il Sung, Chairman of the Central Committee of the Workers' Party of Korea and Premier of the Cabinet of

the DPRK is an unforgettable happy day to the "Ali Archam" Academy of Social Sciences and, on behalf of the Academy, extended warmest thanks to him for his visit to the Academy.

He said, his visit to the Academy enables them to learn more from the experiences of the people of the DPRK and their successes and experiences in social science and encourages them to serve the Indonesian people better. Though many of them met Comrade Kim Il Sung for the first time, but knew him well since long ago, he said and stressed that the Academy regards the experiences of the struggle of the Korean people and that of the WPK as valuable textbook.

Hutapea said: "We have known that Comrade Kim Il Sung is a distinguished fighter who set out on the road of revolution in his childhood and led the heroic struggle of the Korean people against the colonial rule of the foreign imperialists to victory and expressed high respect for him, saying, you showed us an example of a genuine revolutionary with infinite love for the working people."

He concluded his speech sincerely wishing him good health and a greater contribution to the Korean revolution and the world revolution. Cheers burst forth again and a chorus sang the *Song of General Kim Il Sung*. Then President Kim Il Sung took floor and gave the historic lecture. His lecture enjoyed admiration of the audience and evoked their stormy response for its diverse and rich contents, profound philosophy, scientific logic and truth.

After his lecture another cheers erupted and shook the

hall and applause continued. Amid the unending cheers of the audience, President Kim Il Sung warmly hugged the Vice-Chairman of the Provisional People's Consultative Conference and waved his hand towards the audience. The Vice-Chairman of the Conference made a speech expressing thanks for his excellent lecture.

"Beloved Comrade Kim Il Sung! I would like to express deep thanks to Comrade Kim Il Sung for your excellent lecture on behalf of the Scientific Committee of the 'Ali Archam' Academy of Social Sciences. Your lecture that profoundly analyzed the experiences of struggle of the Korean people, the experiences accumulated by the Korean people in socialist construction under the leadership of the WPK led by you, in particular, is very important and valuable not only to the 'Ali Archam' Academy of Social Sciences that organized this lecture but also to the entire Indonesian people struggling to build a better life in their rich fatherland. Especially your lecture given after the historic speech of President Soekarno on 'self-reliance' at the General Meeting of the Provisional People's Consultative Conference held on April 11 with your participation constitutes a brilliant ideological weapon in our work for 'self-reliance' in the economy and for maintaining the noble principles of 'independence in politics' and 'independence in culture'."

The Vice-Chairman said: "Tomorrow April 15 is the 53rd anniversary of your birth we do not know how the Korean people celebrate the birth anniversary of their leader, but the

Indonesian people are rejoiced to commemorate your birth anniversary amid the continuously mounting revolutionary situation of the country. I extend sincere congratulations to you on the occasion of the 53rd anniversary of your birth on behalf of the Indonesian working people and on my own behalf. I wish beautiful socialist Korea continuous great victory in the political, economic, cultural and all other fields.

You led the Korean people and thus built the DPRK into an exemplary socialist country, and during the patriotic Fatherland Liberation War between 1950 and 1953 defeated the U.S. imperialist aggressors and strengthened cooperation in the anti-imperialist struggle. Your struggle is a great merit that inspired the Indonesian people to a more active struggle against new colonialism. You have become a genuine internationalist and an exemplary leader of the international communist movement as you have led the WPK to the struggle against modern revisionism under the banner of the international communist movement. I would like to propose adopting the lecture of Comrade Kim Il Sung as a subject of the "Ali Archam" Academy of Social Sciences."

His proposal enjoyed absolute support of all present there. Amid a prolonged warm applause, the Vice-Chairman wished President Kim Il Sung a long life in good health and chanted: "Long live Comrade Kim Il Sung!"

Deafening cheers of hurrah became louder and the "Song of General Kim Il Sung" was struck up. That day the President of the Academy presented him with a significant

gift-bell in the name of his Academy. It was a valuable gift permeated with the warm wish for him to continue to toll the bell of revolution, the bell of revolutionary lecture. He also presented him with the song *Jakarta - Pyongyang* written and composed by Mohtar Embut as a gift.

***

That evening my father visited the lodgings of President Kim Il Sung in reply to his courtesy call, and President Kim Il Sung gave a grand banquet at the State Palace in honour of my father. The impressive speeches they made at the banquet are touching today, too. Their speeches make readers feel how deep their relations were and how beautiful and noble the friendship between the two countries is.

Addressing the banquet first, President Kim Il Sung expressed thanks for the warm welcome and sincere hospitality, and said: "It is only a few days after we arrived in your beautiful country. But in the short time, too, we could see the revolutionary spirit of the Indonesian people valorously struggling against the aggressive plot of the imperialists and see the brilliant successes you have achieved in the struggle to build a new Indonesia.

Especially we impressively listened to the excellent speech of President Soekarno at the Provisional People's Consultative Conference of the Republic of Indonesia. We think the speech would give great strength to the Indonesian people in their resolute struggle against imperialism and colonialism and in the building of a prosperous new country

through self-reliance."

He warmly wished the Indonesian people a fresh victory in the struggle for progress and prosperity of the country under the leadership of President Soekarno.

He further said: "The Republic of Indonesia, a new-emerging nation and the heroic Indonesian people gave us an unforgettable deep impression and our meeting and talks further deepened mutual understanding between us and clearly showed the commonness of our stand and view once again. The Korean people will fight hand in hand with the Indonesian people for the victory of our common cause under the anti-imperialist, anti-colonialist banner, under the banner of unity of the peoples of Asia, Africa and Latin America."

Then President Kim Il Sung proposed a toast to the health of my father and to the strengthening and development of the friendship between the two countries, and drank the toast together with my father and all those present at the banquet.

Then my father made a sincere and impressive speech.

"Your Excellency Kim Il Sung! Your Excellencies and Ladies! Friends! All of us have heard with deep impression the speech Premier Kim Il Sung has just made.

It is a few days after Marshal Kim Il Sung and his party came to our country, but during the days the relations between the two countries have been further deepened and mutual understanding has also been deepened. Our people

are very pleased with it. But actually it is not strange. It is because long before Comrade Kim Il Sung came to our country our people knew well, felt and experienced that the Korean people are our friends."

My father continued to say: "During the short time when I and my party visited Korea the Korean friends further deepened friendly relations with the Indonesian people, before we went to Pyongyang, we knew that Pyongyang rose from debris and turned into a very beautiful and very large city in a short time, the moment I set foot on Pyongyang I felt the strong will of the Korean people and their friendly feelings towards the Indonesian people."

He continued:

"I have seen in Korea, not only beautiful and magnificent buildings but also Korea brilliant under bright sunrays, Korea where the friendly feelings towards the Indonesian people are mounting and the fighting spirit for just cause is growing. When I saw the flames of struggle flaring up in the eyes of the Korean people greeting us with loud cheers and hurrah, I saw in them the eyes of the Indonesian people, the eyes of the fighting Indonesian people. I have been to many countries in Asia, Africa, Europe, and the United States, but nowhere have I seen such eyes burning with fighting will as the eyes of the Korean people."

My father's impressive words about the eyes of the Korean people are not simple greeting words, but an expression of

his sincerity and his artless compliments were in them.

People say eye is the mirror of the mind of man. There is reason that my father as an outstanding orator, accustomed and used to watch with special attention people's eyes which enable him to see their minds said so warm and exciting words about the eyes of the people of the heroic country.

My father continued his enthusiastic speech.

"Is there anything strange that I say Korea and Indonesia struggle and advance together in the same direction with the same resolve? I have always stressed that the struggle against imperialism should be waged jointly. I have seen in Korea the eyes of the Korean people burning up with fighting will and felt that I am a friend of Korea. The Indonesian people and the Korean people will more firmly unite and jointly struggle against imperialism, against oppression of man by man and for happiness of whole humankind."

My father concluded his short yet enthusiastic ardent speech with the exciting slogans.

"Long live Comrade Kim Il Sung! Long live Korea! Long live reunifications of Korea! Long live friendship between Indonesia and Korea!"

They were really exciting slogans chanted by my father, as the head of state representing 104 million people, in praise of the head of state of other country at an official opportunity. It was the voice of heart chanted by a great man attracted by another great man in respect and praise of him.

Night advanced and April 15, a significant birth

anniversary of President Kim Il Sung was breaking to the strains of the cheers of hurrah raised by the participants in the banquet following my father's shout "Long live Comrade Kim Il Sung!" cheers resounding far and wide into the sky of Jakarta. That night, my sisters and I could not bring ourselves to sleep, waiting for the time of congratulatory call on President Kim Il Sung.

April 15 in Jakarta

At last, new day broke on, April 15, 1965. The whole country was in a festive mood with the commemoration of the birth anniversary of the sagacious great man in his presence. It was scheduled that that day, My father would pay a call on President Kim Il Sung as President to congratulate him on his birth anniversary, two of them sign a joint statement and a ceremony would be held to confer the title of honorary doctor on President Kim Il Sung.

All the events had been planned before and told to him and agreed upon during the talks in Bogor to celebrate his birth anniversary significantly. During the talks at the Bogor Palace, my father asked him when it would be good to sign the joint statement, and said:

"Let us sign the joint statement solemnly at the Independence Palace. It would be good to sign at 9:30 on April 15. It is Your Excellency Premier's birth anniversary and the day of conferment of the title of honorary doctor. Therefore, it would be good to sign the joint statement at 9:30 and go to the ceremony of conferring the title of

honorary doctor at 10. We would like to congratulate Your Excellency Premier on your birthday by so doing."

As aforesaid, my father paid deep attention to celebrate his birth anniversary most auspiciously and significantly, and early in the morning of April 15, sent a large floral basket beautifully decorated with fruits and torte as gifts as the first greeting.

The floral basket with a ribbon wishing him welfare and longevity in good health had an autograph of my father, which read:

"I congratulate Your Excellency Kim Il Sung, Premier of the Cabinet of the DPRK on the 53rd birth anniversary and wish you welfare. We are very pleased that you greet your birthday in Jakarta. Yours friendly, President of Indonesia."

Having sent the autograph of best wishes and floral basket to President Kim Il Sung, he visited him in company with us family members. President Kim Il Sung received us with pleasure and expressed thanks for the visit.

My father congratulated him and presented him with a statue of a warrior sitting on "Garuda" as a gift and said: "The warrior on the 'Garuda' is Your Excellency Premier Kim Il Sung and 'Garuda' is Indonesian *Chollima*."

With a bright smile President Kim Il Sung thanked my father. We children also congratulated him and gave a gift to him. Employees of the Palace also offered a gift to him. Political parties, public organizations and individuals of different sections also presented him messages of greetings, floral baskets and gifts, and newspapers ran articles in

congratulation of him.

After the visit the two leaders went to the Independence Palace and after a brief rest, signed the joint statement. The joint statement was a historic diplomatic document adopted after specific discussions and agreement between the two leaders ranging from form to contents of the document and organization of the working group for drafting it.

As is known, important diplomatic documents between states are joint communiqué and joint statement. Joint communiqué is not signed, but joint statement is signed. Therefore, joint statement can be said to be a more authoritative document. During my father's visit to Korea, a joint communiqué was made public. But this time they agreed on issuing a joint statement.

It was at the Bogor talks that this problem was discussed in detail. At that time President Kim Il Sung asked to the host side what kind of document would be good. My father answered; "I think anything would be good. We will do as brothers want."

President Kim Il Sung smilingly said: "Anything will be good for the memory of our meeting."

So my father presented the intention of the host side. "My individual opinion is that a joint statement would be better. It would be good to demonstrate to the world that we are taking a common stand."

President Kim Il Sung agreed. "It would be good."

As a result, the most authoritative diplomatic document

joint statement was adopted. At the talks the contents of the joint statement were also specifically discussed and complete consensus of view was reached on all issues discussed. The talks were held in the study of the president of the Bogor Palace and beginning the talks my father proposed.

"It used to meet guests here. I would like to propose taking off coat before starting talks."

"Very good," President Kim Il Sung instantly agreed.

It shows that they had frank talks without being restricted by complicated formality. There can not be differences of view at the talks between such personages. At the talks the two heads of state reached a complete agreement on all issues discussed such as the issue on developing friendship and strengthening mutual support and solidarity between the two countries, the issue on opposing new and old colonialism and imperialism and achieving unity of the new-emerging forces, especially the support of Korea to the struggle of Indonesia against aggression and threat of foreign forces and the support of the Indonesian people to the Korean people in their struggle for reunification of Korea, and the common stand of supporting the anti-U.S. national salvation struggle of the Vietnamese people. Their talks and the joint statement issued as a result of the talks were historic events as they were a symbol of the development of friendly relations between the two countries and an expression of the deep relations between the two leaders.

The signing and announcement of so significant a document on the birth anniversary of President Kim Il Sung

itself was another event of epochal significance. That day witnessed another significant event, that is, conferment of the title of honorary doctor of engineering. A grand ceremony was held at the State Palace to confer the title of honorary doctor of Engineering on President Kim Il Sung according to the joint decision of the Indonesian government and the Committee for Conferring Academic Degrees and Titles of the Indonesian University.

There was an unusual reason to confer the title of honorary doctor of engineering instead of the usual honorary doctor of social science. In the run up to his visit to our country my father summoned the President of the University.

President of the university proposed awarding the title of honorary doctor of social science to him as he was a preeminent statesman.

My father said:

"Of course, you have reason to propose that I also thought of it. I pondered over it very much."

My father said, we must award him the title of doctor of engineering instead of doctor of social science, and continued;

"The 20th century is the era of the engineering industry. Now in Korea machine-building industry has highly developed. It was too natural to award the title of honorary doctor of engineering to His Excellency Kim Il Sung who has boldly broken the conventional conception that the machine-building industry can develop only in European

countries."

That is how the auspicious ceremony was held for awarding the title of honorary doctor of engineering to President Kim Il Sung on his birth anniversary. Before the ceremony, more than 20 professors solemnly clad in doctor's garment including the University President went to the Independence Palace to take him. They entered the lounge following the guide who gave commands, wielding a baton, and stood in a line.

President Kim Il Sung received them with pleasure and took over doctor's garment and cap from the University President, put them on and, escorted by the University President headed for the State Palace.

On both sides of the road from the Independence Palace to the State Palace thousands of university lecturers and students expressed respect to him, chanting! "Long live respected Premier Kim Il Sung!" and at the entrance of the Palace beautifully decorated women of Garuda Bhinneka Tungggal Ika offered greetings.

He, together with my father, entered the awarding room, when all present there rose and welcomed him with a loud applause. National anthems of the two countries were struck up and the University President made a speech.

"I regarded it as a great honor to award the title of honorary of doctor of engineering to Your Excellency Marshal Kim Il Sung today on April 15, 1965."

He continued to say that the Law of Higher Education of Indonesia stipulates that the honorary title is not

awarded as usual work but to a personage who has rendered distinguished services to science and humankind. He highly praised his idea on the technical revolution and independent national economy and the successes achieved by the Korean people in the struggle to implement it are great attractions and miracles.

Your Excellency premier Kim Il Sung has successfully developed technology for the development of industry and improvement of people's living and provided all conditions for its development, he said and added;

"I have the great honor to confer the title of honorary doctor on Your Excellency Marshal Kim Il Sung today, the 53rd anniversary of your birth.

We regard it as our greatest happiness to have the opportunity to award the title of honorary doctor of engineering to Your Excellency who, considering it his principle to fight against imperialism, liquidated the remnants of a backward colony and erected your country and people from the debris of harsh war."

His speech caused a warm applause of all present.

After his speech the University president presented President Kim Il Sung with the diploma of honorary doctor and hung necklace badge of doctor made of silver.

President Kim Il Sung thanked him and made a meaningful speech. He mentioned the Supreme Order of Indonesia he had received some days ago and the title of the honorary doctor he received that day, and said, I think such honors you gave me as a manifestation of friendship

of the Indonesian people towards the Korean people, and expressed thanks for it.

He continued to say: "Today the Republic of Indonesia is being rapidly strengthened and developed as a great new-emerging nation. In his opening address at the recent Provisional People's Consultative Conference, President Soekarno presented to the Indonesian people a new policy on building an independent national economy and further developing national culture. His call for carrying out the Indonesian revolution with your strength and building a prospering new Indonesia with your strength is entirely just and very important for future development of the Republic of Indonesia.

He stressed: "The principle of self-reliance is one of the basic principles to be maintained either in the revolutionary struggle or in construction. As historical experiences show, the exploited nations can achieve genuine freedom and independence only through their own struggle and the peoples of liberated countries can consolidate the political independence of the country and achieve national prosperity only by building an independent national economy through self-reliance."

The Republic of Indonesia has more than 100 million patriotic people and inexhaustible natural resources, he said and continued; We believe that the Indonesian people, in response to the call of President Soekarno, will more powerfully struggle and make fresh success in liquidating the

remnants of the colonial rule and building an independent economy and brilliant national culture.

Only when *Juche* is established in the training of personnel, too, is it possible to train excellent cadres to serve the revolution and construction of their country, he said and wished the Indonesian University and all the scientific and educational institutions of Indonesia a greater success in the future."

His meaningful and inspiring speech excited all the attendants and the hall burned more warmly with reverence for him. Our people do not forget, but warmly remember the happiness and joy, honor and ecstasy of the day, April 15 in Jakarta on which the meaningful functions were held in company with the great man of the century President Kim Il Sung.

"Song of General Kim Il Sung"

After winding up his official state visit to the Republic of Indonesia until April 14, President Kim Il Sung continued to stay in Jakarta as a guest to the functions of the 10th anniversary of the Bandung Conference.

Participating in the functions were many delegations from 34 countries among which were a number of delegations led by heads of state and government including Chinese Zhou Enlai, but my father always treated President Kim Il Sung as the main guest to the functions and did everything in his power to give him joy and satisfaction.

It was an expression of my father's respect and friendship for him. A splendid state banquet was given at the Indonesia Hotel in Jakarta on April 17, 1965. The banquet was given in the name of the President in honor of the leaders and delegations of many countries of Asia and Africa that had come to our country to attend the 10th anniversary of the Bandung Conference.

At the banquet President Kim Il Sung chatted with leaders of many countries in a cordial and friendly atmosphere. The banquet lasted from 8 in the evening to 12 and culminated in the performance of the immortal revolutionary paean *Song of General Kim Il Sung*. The moment, silence reigned the hall. As if they had promised, they turned their eyes of respect to him.

Chinese Premier Zhou Enlai took his hand and said the *Song of General Kim Il Sung* was being played. He said to my father on the opposite side that it is the song of Comrade Kim Il Sung, a great man of the world.

My father said, he also knows the *Song of General Kim Il Sung* and all the Indonesian people can sing it, and said to President Kim Il Sung;

"Your Excellency respected Premier Kim Il Sung is our honor. As you are well-known to the world, so the song is a famous song of the world."

President Kim Il Sung said with a smile that it is too much. The *Song of General Kim Il Sung* struck up that day was different from the one that had rung in the streets of Jakarta, Bandung and Bogor, on the mountains and valleys

of Cipanas dan Puncak and different parts of the vast plain of West Java.

State banquet participated in by guests of many countries is an official state function in which diplomatic formality is strictly observed. A special treatment of a guest by the host is considered to be disregards of other guests.

In this view, it was uncommon to play the song on President Kim Il Sung in the official state banquet participated in by leaders of many countries.

But my father did not hesitate to ignore the diplomatic formality once as an expression of his special love and respect for him.

The performance of the *Song of General Kim Il Sung* was a privilege that could be bestowed only on him who was enjoying highest respect as a hero of the times produced by humankind and as a great leader recognized by the world.

Many of the participants in the banquet knew the *Song of General Kim Il Sung*. To the strains of the song, they also sang it in heart.

Bright traces of blood on the crags of Changbaek still gleam
Still the Amnok carries along signs of blood in its stream
Still do those hallowed traces shine resplendently
Over Korea ever flourishing and f ee
So dear to all our hearts is our General's glorious name
Our own beloved Kim Il Sung of undying fame

My father, too, vigorously waved his two arms like a

conductor to the strains of the song as if singing the song in heart.

The solemn melody of the "Song of General Kim Il Sung" ringing in the banquet hall, the participants ruminating the meaningful contents of the song, the president "conducting" waving his arms. The banquet hall looked like a hall of concert of the song.

My father said to Prince Norodom Sihanouk that the song is a song on His Excellency respected Premier Kim Il Sung. Sihanouk said he also knew it, and rose and clasped his two hands and made a courteous bow to President Kim Il Sung, saying;

"A great man comes out of a great people. The song of the great man is also a famous song."

He made a dancing gesture, moving hands, feet and the body to the tune of the song. It was a thing unprecedented in the human diplomatic history. My father was satisfied to see the atmosphere of the banquet mounting and naturally proceeding amid repeated performance of the *Song of General Kim Il Sung*.

In the celebrations of the 10th anniversary of the Bandung Conference held in real earnest from the next day, too, my father treated him as the greatest state guest. Grand ceremony was held at the Bung Karno Stadium to celebrate the 10th anniversary of the Bandung Conference.

Invited there as guests were heads of states and governments and dignitaries of 38 countries of Asia and Africa, and the ceremony started with the signing of the heads of delegations of the countries.

My father proposed requesting President Kim Il Sung to sign first and all delegation heads supported it. So President Kim Il Sung signed the paper of the signature first and other delegation heads followed.

Next day a grand ceremony for laying the cornerstone of the Hall of the Conference of the New-Emerging Forces was held in Senayan in the presence of President Kim Il Sung and leaders of many countries.

The Hall was expected to be built for the Conference of the New-Emerging Forces slated for 1966, as an 11-storey magnificent building with a floor space of 10,000 square meters besides the Bung Karno Stadium in Senayan.

At the ceremony speeches were made, and President Kim Il Sung wearing safety helmet, together with Zhou Enlai, Pham Van Dong, and other delegation heads of many countries drove the first 14-meter long concrete pillar for the construction of the hall deep into the ground by pulling a rope of a power hammer.

After the ceremony the delegation heads of different countries went to their lodgings. My father took President Kim Il Sung to this lodging specially by limousine of the President.

President Kim Il Sung was always in the mind of my father.

Meaningful Meetings during Busy Days

President Kim Il Sung was busy participating in the function held every day, but met leaders of many countries,

deepened relations with them and, with his energetic external activities, made a great contribution to the development of bilateral relations with the new-emerging countries and to the acceleration of the victorious advance of the anti-imperialist independent cause of the world revolutionary people.

My father was moved by his noble moral influence, infinite zeal for work and burning enthusiasm.

On his birthday, he went out to the airport and participated in the ceremony to receive Norodom Sihanouk and met him. The next day he had a long reunion with him and in the evening, met Vietnamese Prime Minister Pham Van Dong and at 9:30 p.m., met Chinese Premier Zhou Enlai.

On April 17, he met the Vice-Chairman of the Provincial People's Consultative Conference and had talks with Prime Minister Pham Van Dong again and in the evening met leaders of many countries at the Indonesia Hotel.

On April 18, he participated in the ceremony for commemorating the 10th anniversary of the Bandung Conference, and attended the meeting of the delegation heads of different countries at the Independence Palace, and at 4 p.m. received Souphanouvong, at 5 p.m. Zakania Moheddin, Deputy President of the United Arab Republic (Egypt), and at 6 Subandrio, First Deputy-Prime Minister and Foreign Minister of Indonesia.

On April 19, the last day of his visit to Indonesia, he took part in the ceremony for laying the cornerstone of the Hall of the Conference of the New-Emerging Forces and the grand mass Meeting for the 10th anniversary of the

Bandung Conference. And at 3 p.m. he met Ajahari, Prime Minister of North Kalimantan, and at 4 Chinese Premier Zhou Enlai again.

On the day of departure from Indonesia he was busy receiving the Vice-Chairman of the Supreme Advisory Council and conducted by him, went to the Independence Palace where he chatted with my father, sharing the pang of parting.

Of such meetings, his meeting with Prince Sihanouk of Cambodia is well known to the world.

It was on significant April 15 when President Kim Il Sung met Norodom Sihanouk in Jakarta for the first time. That day Prince Sihanouk arrived in Jakarta by air, and President Kim Il Sung and my father went to the Kemayoran Airport and received him.

When President Kim Il Sung staying in Jakarta as a guest, went out to the airport, breaking the custom, Prince Sihanouk was deeply moved by the unexpected honor. As he did usually to pay tribute, he clasped his hands and bowed, expressing thanks time and again.

President Kim Il Sung shook hands with him and exchanged greetings and said he would pay a courtesy call on him. Greatly moved by his kindness, Prince Sihanouk said his reception of him at the airport is very grateful and he should pay courtesy call, and it is not right for him to receive courtesy call.

It was for the first time for him to meet President Kim Il Sung in Jakarta, but had have a peculiar respect for him. One year before he had come to celebrate the National Day of Indonesia,

and met the officials of the advance party of Korea, and said:

"I have friendly feelings towards His Excellency Premier Kim Il Sung and the Korean people. I have made up my mind already to visit Korea and given instructions to inform your country of my decision. I will visit Korea. I have already invited His Excellency Premier Kim Il Sung to Cambodia. When he comes we will warmly welcome him as the greatest state guest.

The entire people of Cambodia and I are waiting for him to visit Cambodia. He may come at any time. Back home, please convey my regards to His Excellency Premier Kim Il Sung. Please request him to visit Cambodia as early as possible."

Being such a man, no sooner had he arrived in his lodgings in Jakarta than he officially informed the Korean side of his intention to pay a courtesy call on President Kim Il Sung. That is how they had the first historic rendezvous at the lodging of President Kim Il Sung. After receiving greetings of Prince Sihanouk who paid courtesy call, President Kim Il Sung said:

"As I arrived earlier, I intended to pay a courtesy call on you, but you said you would come here, so we met here."

Prince Sihanouk said: "Your Excellency Marshal is very kind enough to receive me at the airport. It is my duty to pay a visit to Your Excellency Marshal today."

He continued to say: "Your Excellency Marshal, I have long known your reputation. So I have long hoped to meet Your Excellency. During the celebrations of the Independence

Day of Indonesia last year I expected to meet your Excellency Marshal together with President Soekarno here in Jakarta. I regretted that I could not meet you that time."

President Kim Il Sung said with a smile, it was because of some reason. I apologized to President Soekarno for it and today I have to apologize to you, too.

Prince Sihanouk said. "Today I am specially pleased, because I have long waited for meeting with Your Excellency Marshal. Though we have met for the first time, we are like old acquaintances. Let us remain lasting friends in the future. Lasting friends in the future; the great weight of the meaningful words were proved by history later.

Deeply moved by the sincere words, Prince Sihanouk requested for handshake as an expression of lasting friendship.

Firmly pressing his hand, President Kim Il Sung said: "There is no problem between us that will separate us. There is only friendship."

"You are right. Nothing can separate us," Prince Sihanouk also said.

The noble relations between President Kim Il Sung and Prince Norodom Sihanouk admired by the world was firmly established as a lasting one already in their first meeting. That day Prince Sihanouk thanked President Kim Il Sung for the equipment sent to Cambodia as gift, reiterated his intention to visit Korea, and said they would sincerely follow Korea

though they cannot catch up and go ahead of Korea.

President Kim Il Sung modestly said: "Let us not say one follows the other, but let us go ahead hand in hand. We can get what we have not from you, and you can get what you have not from us, and we can learn what we do not know from you, and you can learn you do not know from us. Let us go together helping and learning from each other in this way. It is necessary for the new-emerging countries in Asia to develop rapidly through mutual cooperation. Then big powers cannot invade us. It is necessary for the small countries to unite more firmly."

His open-minded words run through with the idea of independence and friendship greatly excited Sihanouk and renewed his desire to receive his instructions frankly.

Sihanouk informed President Kim Il Sung of the situation of his country and said, as Cambodia refused to receive the "aids" of the imperialists, they slander it as a "satellite country" of other country.

President Kim Il Sung said: "You are brave and resolute and lead the people well. We fully support your policy.

He continued: "The imperialists say our country is also a 'satellite country' … Do people make revolution in their country and build their country to be satellite of other country? At first we fought against the aggression of the Japanese imperialists, and then against US imperialism. The purpose of our struggle was not to become a satellite of other country. We fought to live freely."

He said, we regard independence in politics, self-support

in the economy and self-reliance in defense as the most important principle in the relations with socialist countries, our friendly relations with big countries are relations of mutual support and cooperation based on the principle of equality, there cannot be other relations.

Prince Norodom Sihanouk was deeply moved, and said it was matter of course, and quite wise instructions, and his instructions greatly inspired him. It is a universal knowledge how President Kim Il Sung kept his promise with Sihanouk for tens of years. It would not be surprising if the promise was kept under normal circumstances and while Prince Sihanouk remained in the high position of the head of state. But the noble moral obligation President Kim Il Sung kept in the relations with Sihanouk was an expression of the love and duty he showed always invariably as his friend, as his companion and as brother not under royal circumstances but at the most trying time when Sihanouk was experiencing harsh misfortunes. It was a great noble duty unheard of in the world diplomatic history and world political history.

That is why, in his memoirs *On the Special Relations between me and President Kim Il Sung*, present Great King of Cambodia Norodom Sihanouk wrote;

"The unconditional friendship President Kim Il Sung showed whenever I found myself in difficulty was a genuine moral obligation between man and man. In this view there cannot be two Koreas to me. To me Korea means Kim Il Sung and Kim Jong Il. …As long as I am the King or President of Cambodia, the day of official

recognition of the south Korean government can never come nor will come."

Sihanouk's old friend, former reporter of the *News Diplomacy*, Bernard Chrisha, in the preface to his writing, wrote:

"There was a leader who maintained unique friendship which cannot be too much even if it is called the best friendship of our times. North Korean President Kim Il Sung and Cambodian King Norodom Sihanouk were quite different in their backgrounds, characters and philosophies."

But all the differences could not exert influence on the noble relations between the two leaders. Concerning the moral obligation that was carried on even in the tempest of the times, King Sihanouk said: "The day after I met President Kim Il Sung at the Presidential Residence of Soekarno in Jakarta in April 1965. I broke the diplomatic relations between Cambodia and south Korea, and recognized north Korea as the only Korea."

North Korea of President Kim Il Sung had no interests in the relations with Sihanouk who was completely in ruin from March 1970 to September 1991. But President Kim Il Sung supported me to the end."

In the memory of all people President Kim Il Sung is still kept.

Witnessing President Kim Il Sung conducting energetic external activities without a moment's rest in Jakarta, my father specially admired his great internationalist character.

His internationalism was such a thing that even though

he loses something, he actively supports and helps the just struggle of others unconditionally. It was also internationalism based on warm love for his people and his nation.

It was when they were discussing on the adoption of joint statement between the two countries and its contents. President Kim Il Sung, as a guest, let my father speak first, agreed to all issues proposed by my father, and expressed his intention simply and clearly, saying, "good", "hat would be good", and "I agree." He expressed his view specially only on the issue on denouncing the south Korean authorities for holding the humiliating traitorous anti-reunification "South Korea-Japan Talks" and the issue on supporting and assisting the anti-US national salvation war of the Vietnamese people.

Stressing the need to include the denunciation of the "South Korea-Japan Talks" in the joint statement, he said:

"A resolution on this issue was already adopted at the Indonesian National Assembly, and I hope that that spirit would be included in the joint statement."

My father, of course, fully agreed. "That's good. Let us include such contents."

President Kim Il Sung was satisfied and proposed the Vietnamese issue."Concerning the Vietnamese issue we should say that the Vietnamese issue should be left to the Vietnamese people and the United Nations and a third party should not interfere in it."

Meanwhile my father mentioned the joint struggle

with the Vietnamese people and said it would be good to denounce the U. S. imperialists for their interference in the Vietnamese affairs and include such contents that the Asian issues including the Vietnamese issue must be solved by Asians in an Asian way.

President Kim Il Sung said:

"According to the message we received from the homeland, in Viet Nam the People's Assembly held between April 8 and 10, expressed the stand of the government on the Vietnamese issue. The contents are as follows. The stand of Viet Nam is to implement the Geneva Agreement of 1954, and to do a thing like the Geneva Conference of 1954 on condition that first of all the U. S. forces withdraw, an immediate end is put to the aggressive acts of the U. S. imperialists and the sovereignty of Viet Nam is respected, and to oppose any agreement.

I think that the Vietnamese informed us of such contents so that during my stay here, we tell you about that. In the future Prime Minister Pham Van Dong will come here. It seems that they want the contents we agree on, in document would meet their demand, before he comes."

My father said, "I fully support the principle presented by the Vietnamese Government" and expressed agreement to his view. In this way it was agreed to include the issue of the "South Korea-Japan Talks" and the Vietnamese issue in the joint statement. Concerning it, President Kim Il Sung resolutely said to the Korean officials participating in the

drafting of the joint statement;

"…We must more strongly denounce the U. S. imperialists for their aggression against Viet Nam and increase the intensity of support to the struggle of the Vietnamese people."

As a result, the strong joint statement was adopted that expressed the principled stand of the two countries towards the Vietnamese issue."

President Kim Il Sung was such a man. During the talk with Vietnamese Prime Minister Pham Van Dong, too, he worried about their difficulties, actively supported and encouraged their struggle and inspired them to have firm confidence in their just cause.

According to the schedule, April 16 was holiday. But President Kim Il Sung did not take rest that day, too. It was that day when he received Prime Minister Pham Van Dong for the first time.

That day the Vietnamese Prime Minister said he had an urgent problem to say, and requested him to have a document on the Vietnamese problem adopted at the functions of the 10th anniversary of the Bandung Conference.

President Kim Il Sung said he learned the functions of the 10th anniversary of the Bandung Conference, and that some countries said they would not come if political document was adopted. So the problem must propose in consideration of the atmosphere. He advised Prime Minister Pham Van Dong to conduct some activities to adopt the document.

The Vietnamese Prime Minister said he would do so and

asked to what extent the document should be. President Kim Il Sung said the document must not be too weak and that it must be as strong as pointed out in the Korea-Indonesian joint statement as far as the situation permits.

Next day he met the Vietnamese Prime Minister again. The Vietnamese Prime Minister said he had been authorized to inform him of the situation of his country. He dwelt on their difficulties and requested him for advice about it.

At that time Vietnam had many difficulties, sandwiched between two big powers. President Kim Il Sung told him not to worry, but receive all aids, and continued:

"Nobody will believe that you have sold out the country. You have fought for 20 years. Can you not know that you are sold or not? We are resolved to do as you say without vacillation. The Political Committee of our Party has decided to act as Vietnamese comrades demand. So we are resolved to produce more. Demand whatever you want. We will supply everything possible without hesitation."

He said angrily. "While people are dying and houses are burning on one side why should they fight each other, saying the aids are real or not. We must continue to make efforts to achieve unity, whatever they may say. You should receive all aids the brotherly countries give. We will do everything in our power to assist you."

Later President Kim Il Sung helped the Vietnamese people with everything in his power, nay with more than that. It's no more secret now that he not only rendered them material

and spiritual assistance but also helped with blood, sending airmen. It is too well known that during the Vietnamese war the American airmen ran away, trembling with fear when they heard the voices of Korean airmen in their receivers.

I feel my heart warming up when I think what a great strength his words in Jakarta would have given to the Vietnamese people. As he was a genuine great internationalist, today, too, he is praised as the sun.

President Kim Il Sung and "Young Commander" on the Day of Departure from Jakarta

On April 20, 1965, President Kim Il Sung left Jakarta after his visit to Indonesia. That day the heads of state of the two countries met at the Independence Palace and said goodbye to each other. After deepening friendly relations spending ten days and ten nights together, they had a warm chat, sharing a pang of separation.

My father said:

"I say to our people that they must respect Your Excellency Premier Kim Il Sung and learn from the example of Korea, we must learn from Korea. Therefore I say to our people they must open their eyes wide and strain their ears. It means to learn from what is seen and learn from what is heard."

President Kim Il Sung warmly told him not to say he learnt but go together hand in hand. And he thanked for the utmost hospitality. He thanked for my father's constant company during his visit, in particular, and for his personal attention paid to the security affairs.

In fact, my father was always together with him at all functions during his stay in Indonesia and showed all sincerity and personally commanded guard for his security. It was unprecedented.

On the day of his arrival in Jakarta my father ordered even armored cars to be mobilized for guard, and when they were going from Bandung to Bogor, guards to be posted at the intervals of 20-30 meters in the whole 160 kilometers, long mountain roads, even helicopter to fly for perfect security. He also appointed generals of the ground force and high-ranking police officials as aide-de-camps and changed cars of President Kim Il Sung so that there should be no mistune in security. During a function he had President Kim Il Sung in the car of the President and reinforced the escort cars, giving repeated instructions on ensuring his security.

In those days my father learned well about "the young commander" who was working hard day and night for the security and health of President Kim Il Sung and did his best to ensure security as he intended.

When President Kim Il Sung was expected to go from Bandung to Bogor on April 12, the chief of the Guard of the President reported to my father that "the young commander" of Korea intended to go before hand for security.

Reported of it, my father said: "Then I will pay deeper attention to the security of His Excellency Kim Il Sung. He gave instructions again on strengthening special guard."

Already at that time my father realized the uncommon ability and position of "the young commander." When the

issue of naming Kimilsungia faced difficulty because of modesty of President Kim Il Sung, my father understood that the problem could be solved only by "the young commander" and gave special instructions to the Director for Protocol to contact with him. So my father could not accept the thanks of President Kim Il Sung for the security, and said: "Your Excellency, you should thank your 'young commander' for it, and asked what was the official post of the young commander."

President Kim Il Sung said he is the senior aide-de-camp responsible for his security, and laughed a hearty laugh, saying he was also obeying the "senior aide-de-camp"

My father also laughed, showing his thumb. That moment, "the young commander" was having meaningful chat with close associates, young officials and guards he made acquaintance with during the visit. He received them with pleasure that had come to say goodbye and said Indonesia is a beautiful country. It was significant words that expressed his impressions in a few words.

He continued to say impressively, Indonesia is a hot country, Korea is also hot in summer, but has 4 seasons, spring season is a warm flowering season, autumn, a cool golden season with yellow leaves and all kinds of crops and fruits ripe, summer, a hot season and winter, a cold season, but life is active and mountains and rivers are all beautiful. He said proudly that Korea lives in fresh mood in different seasons.

Young officials of our country expressed infinite longing

for Korea, a country of morning calm, a country with four seasons, a country of miracles shining with *Juche* and well known for the winged horse *Chollima*, and said they want to visit Korea. He warmly said, come to Korea and we will welcome you.

They shouted for joy at his kind invitation. Looking round at them affectionately, "the young commander" said: "Korea is a country good to live in, the Korean people, too, love their country, but the Yankees have occupied a half of Korea and are suppressing the south Korean people. They attempt to occupy Korea and the world. They are also wrong towards Indonesia. U. S. imperialism is the sworn enemy of the Korean people and the enemy of the Indonesian people. The Yankees boast of their strength, but we do not fear them, if we fight in Korea, you fight in Indonesia, and the people of the whole world dismember U. S. imperialism in all parts, they will be impotent and go to ruin."

He further said: "Korea is the country of *Juche*, you are also going along the road of independence, when the world people fight in unity under the banner of independence, they will win and the peoples of the new-emerging countries must firmly unite. So saying, he gave them confidence."

That day "the young commander" Kim Jong Il had a picture taken with young associates of the President. The picture is an unfading picture telling the exploits of leader Kim Jong Il who loyally assisted great President Kim Il Sung, leading Korea together with him since the 1960s and telling the noble efforts he made, printing shining footprints in the

history of Indonesia-Korea friendship.

***

After having significant talk and bidding farewell in a cordial and friendly atmosphere at the Bogor Palace, they directly drove to the Kemayoran Airport.

A special plane to carry President Kim Il Sung was waiting for them there. Many people saw off President Kim Il Sung from the Palace to the airport. Flags of the two countries were hoisted and many people were lining up to see off the guests. Their faces represented their reluctance to part with President Kim Il Sung who was leaving for home after further deepening friendship and neighborhood between the peoples of the two countries and making a great contribution to the strengthening of the militant unity of the Asia, African and Latin American peoples on the front of the anti-imperialist struggle through his state visit to Indonesia and participation in the celebrations of the 10th anniversary of the Bandung Conference.

Present at the airport were the First and Second Deputy-Prime Ministers and other high-ranking officials and leaders of political parties and public organizations. Also present there were Chinese Premier Zhou Enlai, Vice-Premier Chen Yi, Vietnamese Prime Minister Pham Van Dong, Cambodian Prime Minister Norodom Kantol and leaders of countries who participated in the celebrations of the 10th anniversary of the Bandung Conference, foreign diplomatic representatives in Indonesia, and Korean embassy staff

members and their families.

President Kim Il Sung arrived at the airport amid warm send-off, and women in their holiday best presented him with fragrant garlands, wishing him safe return. National anthems of Korean and Indonesia were solemnly struck up and 21-gun salute boomed.

The people expressed unwillingness to part, chanting "Goodbye" and waving flags of the two countries. Amid the cheers of the people the two leaders reviewed a guard of honor.

They bade farewell and hugged firmly. President Kim Il Sung exchanged farewells with sending-off leaders of many countries and foreign diplomatic representatives, boarded the plane and waved his hand. At 9.30 a.m. the plane took off and turned to Korea, to Pyongyang.

My father and all others did not leave, waving hands until the plane was out of their sight.

On his way home President Kim Il Sung sent kind message of thanks to my father crossing the border.

In his message he said:

"We have left for home with unforgettable deep impressions on the Republic of Indonesia. Crossing your border, I express deep thanks once again to you and through you, to the entire Indonesian people for the warm hospitality accorded us during our stay in your country.

Believing that in the future the friendly and cooperative relations between the peoples of our two countries would further fluoresce and develop through the joint struggle

against imperialism and colonialism and for the building of a new society, I sincerely wish you and the entire Indonesian people great success in the work to build independent and prospering new Indonesia."

His warm feelings and kind inspiration touched my father and the people of our country. The visit to Indonesia of President Kim Il Sung, the great leader of the Korean people and the sun of the revolution respected by the world people was a great event in the history of Indonesia and an epoch-making opportunity that developed the friendship and neighborhood between the two countries onto a new high stage.

Already nearly 56 years has passed since his visit to our country, the beautiful memories of the days of his visit to Indonesia still warm up my heart.

V

ALONG WITH KIMILSUNGIA

"Friendship Girl Moran"

The relations between the two countries favorably developed day by day after President Kim Il Sung visited my country Indonesia. High-level delegations were exchanged in succession, and solidarity ceremonies for mutual support and cooperation were held. Under such circumstances, a beautiful friendship flower, "friendship girl" came into bloom, as a symbol of Indonesia-Korea friendship.

Among the Indonesian officials who accompanied President Kim Il Sung during his visit to Indonesia, together with my father, was Supri Yusuf who was Charge d'Affaires a.i. of Indonesia in Korea.

He, who had the honour to accompany him as a retinue of the President according to diplomatic custom, knew better how experienced and intelligent, how seasoned and kind-hearted, and how modest and condescending President Kim Il Sung was and was entirely fascinated by his great personality.

Some days after he returned to Pyongyang in ecstasy of attraction and reverence, witnessing the country vibrating with enthusiasm under the leadership of the great man of the century, his wife gave birth to a pretty daughter.

Yusuf was very happy to have his first daughter in Pyongyang, the city he was dispatched to, the beautiful capital of Korea, the home of *Juche* well known for *Chollima*.

He regarded his dispatch to Korea as a fortune given by heaven and thought it a great honour to render services, though small to the development of the friendly relations between the two countries. So Yusuf wanted to give his daughter born in Pyongyang a Korean name, a very meaningful and beautiful Korean name.

He made up his mind to tell the most respected great President Kim Il Sung of his desire and request him to name his daughter.

His earnest desire was known to the Korean side and was immediately reported to President Kim Il Sung.

President Kim Il Sung accepted his request with pleasure and named his daughter "Friendship Girl Moran" and sent his autograph: "Let us name her Friendship Girl Moran".

As a result, the Indonesian girl was named Friendship Girl Moran.

Upon receiving the autograph carrying great benevolence, Yusuf made a deep bow to the portrait of President Kim Il Sung expressing thanks. The portrait of the President hung at the home of Yusuf also had a significant story. It was in significant April when President

Kim Il Sung was visiting Indonesia.

He was reported that many personages of our country wanted to have his portraits at home, and saw to that his portraits signed by him were sent to them.

Supri Yusuf was one of the recipients of his portraits with his signature. On top of the joy and emotion of the day, now President Kim Il Sung named his daughter and sent his autograph. Yusuf could not find words to express his thanks for his kindness. Since then Yusuf offered his greetings along with best wishes to President Kim Il Sung on his birth anniversary every year.

Later Yusuf returned home and Moran also came back to Jakarta together with her parents.

Story of What Happened Later

Moran grew up, finished high school course and was due to enter university. After entering university, she realized what a great honor she enjoyed concerning her beautiful and meaningful name, and harbored warm reverence for the kind-hearted father respected President Kim Il Sung who had named her. When can I visit longed-for Pyongyang? It was her earnest desire lingering in her heart.

One day in early February 1983, she learned that her husband's sister Suryandari would go to Pyongyang. Wiji Suryandari working as a stewardess of airliner was to go to Pyongayang aboard a plane carrying a government delegation of Indonesia.

Moran decided to send a letter to the kind-hearted father

President Kim Il Sung. Wiji Suryandari gave the letter to the Director for Security at the Military Affairs Section of the Presidency, one of the delegation members requesting him to convey the letter to President Kim Il Sung.

President Kim Il Sung received the Government Delegation of Indonesia led by Vice-President Mali on February 11, 1983. The Director for Security availed himself of the opportunity to convey the letter to the Korean side and at last the President received the letter.

"Most respected President Kim Il Sung.

It is my great honor to have the opportunity to send a letter to you.

My name is Moran Gambira Dasawati Yusuf. I was named by respected father President. I believe you would still remember me.

I am 17 years old. I often open the Album and looking back upon the past when I was a baby, feel an urge to go to Pyongyang where you are. I wish kind-hearted father respected President good health. Unfortunately I can see and hear about you only on television and radio and newspapers.

Concluding this simple letter with uncontrollable longing, I warmly wish most respected President good health once again.

With best regards,
Moran Yusuf
February 6, 1983."

President Kim Il Sung read the letter, affectionately looked at the picture of Moran for a long while with deep emotion, and said:

"Moran, the daughter of Yusuf who worked as Charge d'Affaires ad interim at the Embassy of Indonesia in our country sent me a letter together with her photograph. I must send my reply letter to her. Moran was born in Pyongyang, I named her."

President Kim Il Sung gave instructions on inviting Moran for holidays in Korea and said, a gift should be sent to Moran in my name, and the works "The Tasks of the People's Government for Modeling the Whole Society on the *Juche* Idea" and "Theses on Socialist Education" as souvenir. He also said as soon as the gift is ready, it must be sent without delay when the Government Delegation of Indonesia goes back. And he signed on the English translations of the works to be sent to Moran. He also sent an autographic letter together with the gift.

"Dear Moran Yusuf. Your photograph reminded me of my naming you. It seems yesterday, but you already finished the high school and are at the age to study at University, and sent me a letter asking after my health and with best wish. You are really praiseworthy."

He further wrote that he was pleased to learn that Moran with Korean name in far-off Jakarta is well and her father and all other family members are in good health, and invited

her to Pyongyang.

"In your letter you, Moran, said you cannot control your desire to come to Pyongyang where you were born, and I also want to see grown-up Moran. I hope you, together with your father, if impossible, you alone would come to our country again for a visit for holidays as well."

In conclusion, he expressed the expectation that Moran would study well in health and become an excellent person for the country and people in the future, and requested her to convey his best wish to her father and other family members.

So the government delegation of Indonesia brought his autographic letter and gift when it returned home.

The Director for Security said it is his greatest honor to convey the letter and gift sent by respected President Kim Il Sung and he would convey them with responsibility.

Moran who received the valuable personal letter and kind gift sent by President Kim Il Sung became an object of admiration of the neighbors and envy of friends.

The great benevolence of President Kim Il Sung run through with noble love convinced Moran that there is a warmer and greater love than that of her parents.

She read till late at night the famous works blazing the road of humankind with the truth of independence, the works signed by him. Therefore neighbours called her house "Moran light house".

The DPRK Embassy in Jakarta invited Moran and her

father and mother to a dinner and film show. They spent a pleasant evening at the Korean Embassy.

Reported of the dinner and film show that day, President Kim Il Sung said, it is very good that Indonesian Moran I named, participated in the dinner and film show hosted by our Embassy in that country, if Moran and her mother want to come to our country we should accept their request and when they come, they must be treated well.

Thanks to kind-hearted President Kim Il Sung, Moran and her mother visited Korea as they wished.

It was September 1983 when Korea was celebrating the 35th anniversary of her National Day.

270 delegations from 116 countries participated in the celebrations and President Kim Il Sung was busy receiving delegations every day. But he met Moran and her mother and had a picture taken with them.

Moran Yusuf presented him with a sincere gift she had prepared. He thanked her and gave her the embroidery "Three fairies" and a frame of picture.

He had prepared the frame in advance for the picture he had taken with them that day. President Kim Il Sung said he had received the photograph and letter sent by the friendship girl Moran and he was pleased to meet her and her mother.

President Kim Il Sung asked after Moran's father who was staying in Sri Lanka, told them to convey his greetings to him and remembered his naming of Moran.

He said: "When Moran's father was Charge d'Affaires

ad interim of Indonesia in our country, he requested me to name his daughter. So I named her Friendship girl Moran. Friendship Girl means friendship between the two countries. Moran means she is as beautiful as peony. In Pyongyang there is a hill called Moran, which was named so because it looks like Moran or peony."

Telling about the meaning of the name he gave, he looked at Moran affectionately and said Moran or peony is considered to be the king of flowers. Hearing his kind words Moran blushed, looking like a blossom of peony in bloom.

That day Moran wished President Kim Il Sung and leader Kim Jong Il good health and thanked him for kind invitation of her to her birth place Pyongyang. President Kim Il Sung told her to send letters in the future, too, and proposed being close to each other later, too. Encouraged by his kind words, she told him about her impressions on her visit to the Library of the Academy of Agricultural Science and frankly said after graduating from the Agricultural College in Indonesia, she would like to do practice in Korea.

President Kim Il Sung accepted her request with pleasure, telling her to come and saying we would welcome, and encouraged her to become an excellent person serving for Indonesia. Moran and her mother thanked him for kindly meeting them, saying warm words to them and giving them kind gift though he was busy because of the commemoration ceremonies of the national day, expressed thanks to President Kim Il Sung and leader Kim Jong Il for their kindness and sincerely wished them good health and greater success in

their noble cause.

On the unforgettable day, Moran expressed resolve to hold respected President Kim Il Sung in high esteem forever as her father, saying: "Today is the happiest day in my life. Even though I live for 100 years there would not be a day as happy as today. You, kind-hearted President Kim Il Sung, have treated me like your daughter. "

Seven years passed since then and Moran was to marry. Learning that she would marry, he said: "We must send gifts in my name in congratulation of the wedding ceremony of the Friendship Girl Moran, the daughter of the former Charge d'Affaires ad interim of Indonesia in our country, named by me."

And he gave kind instructions on sending a folding screen with pictures of peony blossoms in bloom, silver jewelry box, materials for woman's garment and different kinds of wines. Even father often fails to make a suit of clothes for his wedding daughter if he is thousands of miles far across oceans and continents.

But President Kim Il Sung did not forget the relations established 25 years before, but sent so precious wedding gifts to Moran across ocean. It is a noble love that could be shown only by President Kim Il Sung, incarnation of love and moral obligation. The story is kept deep in the hearts of all of us as a legend of love telling how he valued the friendship between the two countries, along with his noble morality.

Leader Kim Jong Il and Kimilsungia

Kimilsungia came into being in Indonesia nearly half a century ago, was named by my father Soekarno who was President that time and has grown and bloomed in Korea thanks to Leader Kim Jong Il. Now the flower is widely known to the world as a famous flower.

Kimilsungia was in bloom in the mind of my father who specially respected President Kim Il Sung and had deep relations with him, is in bloom in the mind of our Indonesian people and serves as a symbol of friendship between the two countries that stood tempest of history.

My father promised to send the flower to Korea as early as possible after the method of its cultivation was completed.

But he could not keep his promise. He lost power and stepped down from the political scene in the "September 30 incident".

In the complicated political disturbance, many people dispersed and separated and their whereabouts were unknown. Kimilsungia left no trace behind.

It was leader of Korea Kim Jong Il who firmly believed that Kimilsungia would not have faded, but remain in bloom no matter how strong the tempest may be and how hard rain and snow may be. He ordered officials to find out Kimilsungia, saying, "we must find out Kimilsungia without fail, the flower would not have faded, but remain in bloom somewhere as it came into bloom in the mind of the people in the latter half of the 20th century."

All facts later known to us and the world proved the

scientific insight of the great man who sees through the world, the accuracy of his judgment and the validity of his confident and intelligent words.

Towards the close of 1974 Kassan, who had been given the task to complete the cultivation technology of Kimilsungia by my father when he was the Director of the Bogor Botanical Gardens, was working as gardener of a hotel run by an Australian. Kassan was ill and bed-ridden in the end. His illness got worse as the days went by and his recovery could not be expected. His failure to bring the seedling of Kimilsungia when he was leaving the botanical garden tormented him more painfully than his physical pain caused by illness. After spending agonizing days, feeling guilty about failure to send Kimilsungia to President Kim Il Sung, he met his last day.

He called his son Rimk and, escorted by him went to the shore of lake. It was early morning with soft fog hanging on the limpid surface. Unknown birds were chirping somewhere, but it did not break the quietness of the morning.

Kassan felt compassion, thinking that it was the last morning in his life. At last the morning fog cleaned up and red sun rose. Sunrays warmed his body tormented by illness.

The moment he visualized President Kim Il Sung in his mind's eyes, who embraced him in his bosom, he felt his heart rending as he thought that he could no longer see him.

With tears in his eyes, he said to his son Rimk.

"My son, from olden times it was said people must leave

something behind for the generations to come. Some said property must be handed down and some, honor as legacy, but I cannot leave either property or honor for you.

I wanted to cultivate Kimilsungia well throughout my life and offer it to the respected President Kim Il Sung and hand it down as an heirloom. But I could not realize my desire.

So you grow and bloom Kimilsungia and send it to Korea in my stead."

And he told Rimk to go to Mr. Bundt, his comrade-in-arms who had bred Kimilsungia and give him his letter addressed to Bundt. The letter wrote:

"It is pity to die without realizing my desire to make Kimilsungia grow thick and come into bloom beautifully in Korea. But I believe that Kimilsungia would grow and bloom as beautiful flower in Korea."

As ordered by his father, Rimk went to Mr Bundt with the letter and became his assistant. With such help of such Rimk, Korean friends found out Mr. Bundt at last. They were greatly excited to find the fragrant and beautiful Kimilsungia in a cozy greenhouse at the foot of a hill and expressed thanks, saying, "Mr. Bundt, thank you for your sincerity."

Bundt said, "Friends, what flower is this? To a botanist, what he has bred is like his life. It was said from olden times that a farmer keeps seed though he starves to death. … A writer thinks of a verse while closing his eyes and a shepherd

does not cut skin while shearing wool. It is unimaginable. My lifelong purpose is to perfect the cultivation technology of Kimilsungia."

He proudly added, in Indonesia there are not a quite few people who cultivate Kimilsungia with sincerity and those who had worked at the Presidential Palace are greatly interested in cultivation and protection of the flower.

Having met Bundt and found out the flower, Korean friends sent a message to leader Kim Jong Il.

"Dear leader, a happy New Year. We wish the fatherly leader good health. Leader, we have found out Kimilsungia."

It was on December 31, 1974.

Kim Jong Il said Kimilsungia was found out after 10 years, how pleased the leader would be, and gave instructions to bring the flower to the homeland.

"Now it is winter in the homeland. So you must bring Kimilsungia, a tropical plant, keeping it warm."

As a result, Kimilsungia was brought to his office room in cold winter in January 1975.

Seeing Kimilsungia time and again, Kim Jong Il was very pleased, saying, this is Kimilsungia, this is the flower the leader saw and said it is very beautiful 10 years ago.

Pink Kimilsungia which did not fade but remained in

bloom, was really beautiful as if it had waited for the day, experiencing turns and twists in the tropical insular country for 10 years.

Kim Jong Il could not tear his eyes from the simple, yet graceful and fragrant flower. Greatly excited, he said to the officials: "I think you see this flower for the first time. What is your impression on this flower?"

Officials said, "the flower is specially beautiful, fragrant and attractive."

Kim Jong Il said to them, Kimilsungia is specially beautiful indeed, there are many flowers in the world, they have their names and are beautiful in their way, but there would not be a flower with so brilliant name as Kimilsungia, and so beautiful as this flower.

Orchid our Indonesians love was considered from olden times to be a symbol of chaste, pure and clear conscience and symbol of beauty. There are numerous species in orchid and the best species of them are more than 15,000 kinds, but the most beautiful of them is Kimilsungia. The beauty of the flowers also has limit, so it is said that no flower remains red ten days, but Kimilsungia is a rare flower which does not fade once it comes into bloom.

That day Kim Jong Il said as he saw Kimilsungia again in the homeland, what happened at the Bogor Botanical Gardens 10 years ago seemed yesterday and looked back with deep emotion upon what had happened in those days.

He said, "Kimilsungia is not a mere natural flower. It is a

flower of the era of the respected leader President Kim Il Sung who has given the sunrays of Juche to all people and a flower of loyalty that has come into bloom representing the desire of humankind warmly revering and following him. Kimilsungia is so beautiful and valuable because it is in bloom in the mind of the people. Kimilsungia is a flower of revolution which gives to our people national pride and honour of living and carrying on revolution under the guidance of the great leader and further hardens their resolve to devote themselves to the cause of Juche."

Kim Jong Il was so pleased with the finding of Kimilsungia that he gave significant instructions time and again, and warmly said, let us present this flower to the great leader and thus give him pleasure. On the holiday of April, let us make a large floral basket with Kimilsungia and offer it to him.

On the morning of April 15 that year, President Kim Il Sung received a meaningful floral basket on which Kimilsungia is in bloom beautifully, and impressively recalled the day 10 years before when he saw the flower for the first time, and warmly said, the flower is beautiful, it is a very beautiful flower.

Later he sent Kimilsungia to the Central Botanical Garden in Pyongyang and had an up-to-date Kimilsungia Greenhouse and tissue culture room built in order to assimilate the tropical flower Kimilsungia associated with efforts of the Indonesian botanists to the Korean climate and soil and propagate it in large number.

As a result, innovative successes were made in researches to propagate the flower extensively while preserving the superior

characteristics of the origin, Kimilsungia greenhouses were built in all provinces, cities and counties of Korea and Kimilsungia were in bloom as the flower of the sun.

Kimilsungia was cultivated and disseminated in all parts of Korea and the immortal beautiful flower is now in bloom not only in all parts of Korea but also in tens of countries of the five continents including China and Japan.

That is why people say it is leader Kim Jong Il who loved Kimilsungia most. It is also he who brought it into bloom and disseminated it to all parts of the world, and the people highly praise him who made it a flower of the times, a famous flower of the world loved by humankind.

Kimilsungia and Soekarnos

My father visited the Bogor Botanical Gardens several times after President Kim Il Sung returned home.

My father brought home Kimilsungia President Kim Il Sung had seen, and used to be lost in meditation before it for a long time. All our family members loved the flower and were more pleased than anybody else when it was in bloom as he desired. One day the breeder of the flower Bunt visited my brother Guntur Soekarnoputra.

He said; "Now in Korea, research into Kimilsungia is active. If it is internationally registered, the flower will shine more brightly all over the world. Kimilsungia was born in Indonesia. The flower is associated with sincerity of President Soekarno. But as he's dead, the flower has not been registered with official scientific name at the International Orchid

Society. The situation of the country changed and scholars dispersed in an unexpected adversity and, in the course, tens of years have already passed. President Soekarno, in his lifetime, said to President Kim Il Sung that we would promote research to assimilate the flower to the climate and soil of Korea and send it to Pyongyang in the future, didn't he?"

My brother Guntur wiped his eyes with handkerchief, and said:

"Mr. Bundt, thank you for your kind words. How I can forget Kimilsungia, which came into being, and was named after His Excellency President Kim Il Sung despite his refusal, thanks to the warm sincerity of my father.

I know well about His Excellency President Kim Il Sung and about the Korean people as well.

Mr. Bundt, these days you are not well, so if there is any problem concerning Kimilsungia, please tell me without hesitation. Though my father is dead, I am the son of Soekarno and national assemblyman of Indonesia. "

Guntur was lost in deep thought.

My father already died in the trouble of the times, but if I fail to bring Kimilsungia into bloom as desired by him, how I can say I have done my duty as his son. He decided to carry out the important task to register the flower at the International Orchid Society with a scientific name. His resolve became firmer as the flower is in bloom in Korea thanks to the wise measures of leader Kim Jong Il.

Kimilsungia is not only a common property of the world progressive humankind but also heirloom of our Soekarno family. So the application for registration of Kimilsungia as international orchid plant cross-bred was submitted to the British Royal Horticultural Society in the early 1980s, because the orchid plant had to be registered at the British Royal Horticultural Society on behalf of the International Horticultural Society.

The British Royal Horticultural Society was an authoritative society authenticated by the International Horticultural Society. It is also according to such usage and procedures that Begonia plants are registered at the American Begonia Society on behalf of the International Horticultural Society.

With a full understanding of such reality, Guntur, in relations with Mr. Bundt, persistently promoted the registration of the scientific name of Kimilsungia.

The registration of the scientific name of Kimilsungia well-known as a famous flower recognized by the horticultural world was declared in April 1982 when the world was grandly commemorating the 70th anniversary of the birth of President Kim Il Sung, making it more widely known to the world as the undying flower named after the great man.

Congratulating the registration, the Secretary General of the Horticultural Society said:

"Kimilsungia is a masterpiece. It is perfect in contents, form, scientific specifications and all other aspects. April this year is a significant month marking the 70th birth anniversary of His Excellency Kim Il Sung. In the future, Kimilsungia

will demonstrate its beauty to the whole world as a mirror of famous flowers, as a treasure flower of humankind."

Guntur who was also pleased as the applicant for registration is still vivid in my eyes. The joy and emotion of Mr. Bundt, the breeder of Kimilsungia was also indescribable. But he thought the high international authority of Kimilsungia is crystallization of high praise of humankind for President Kim Il Sung rather than a scientific success of a scholar like himself.

In an interview with Mr. Bundt, the correspondent of the British *Reuters* in Indonesia asked:

"How pleased are you as the scientific name of Kimilsungia was registered internationally?"

Bundt answered, "Words fail me to describe my pleasure. I think the official registration of Kimilsungia in the International Orchid Society is a fair appraisal of the great achievements made by His Excellency Kim Il Sung for the human cause of independence and of his high international authority."

During the 13th World Festival of Youth and Students, the Indonesian Youth and Students Delegation took part in the friendly gathering held at Lake Tongchon of Mt. Taesong, and concerning his impressions on Kimilsungia, the delegation head said,

"I have seen Kimilsungia at the Botanical Garden at the foot of beautiful Mt. Taesong. The flower came into

being in our country and today has been registered in the international society and is widely known as a famous flower of humankind. From olden times we Indonesians specially loved orchid flowers. Our country has a saying 'He who was born in orchid is the happiest.' Another saying goes; 'To be pretty, take after orchid.'

Now in our country Indonesia, Kimilsungia is extensively cultivated and specially protected. Kimilsungia is brilliantly shining as an attractive famous flower of humankind for the deep meaning of its name and for its beauty." Grand Kimilsungia Festival is held in Korea every year. The Embassy of Indonesia in the DPRK is an active participant in the significant festival.

The embassy displayed Kimilsungia already at the First Kimilsungia Show that opened on April 10, 1999 and as highly appraised, and the Cultural Delegation of Indonesia led by the Minister of Tourism, Arts and Culture on a visit to Korea at that time, participated in the opening ceremony of the show.

After the show was declared open, Indonesian Minister Marzuki Usman made a congratulatory speech.

He sincerely congratulated the excellent and significant Kimilsungia Show held at the auspicious time and mentioned the historic visit of President Kim Il Sung together with leader Kim Jong Il in memorable April 1965.

Minister Usman pointed out that during his visit President Kim Il Sung called at the Bogor Botanical Gardens, and stressed, at that time he saw a newly-bred, yet unnamed

beautiful orchid in the botanical garden, and President Soekarno named the flower Kimilsungia as a manifestation of respect and trust for President Kim Il Sung. The Indonesian people are proud that Kimilsungia which started with two plants has been propagated into tens of thousands today.

My other brother Guruh Soekarnoputra participated in the opening ceremony of Kimilsungia Festival in April one year and made a congratulatory speech in the capacity of the head of the Indonesian Art Troupe.

In his congratulatory speech Guruh called back the inerasable memory of President Kim Il Sung and leader Kim Jong Il who visited Indonesia 36 years before and wished Kimilsungia would bloom more beautifully and in larger number as a symbol of friendly relations between the peoples of Indonesia and Korea who respect President Kim Il Sung.

Flowers were also presented with sincerity by the staff members of the Indonesian people representing the mind of our Indonesian Embassy especially interested in Kimilsungia Festival. During the 3rd Kimilsungia Show, the Indonesian Embassy installed red parasol and model of Eagle, national decorations of Southeast Asian countries, on both sides of the exhibition stand in the meaning of protecting the flower of the honored man and presented ten full-bloom Kimilsungia pots between them, attracting eyes of visitors.

During the 4th Kimilsungia Festival, various kinds of orchid flowers brought from Indonesia were placed as auxiliary flowers, and a butterfly flying to the petal of Kimilsungia was portrayed, well showing warm respect and reverence of our

Indonesian people for President Kim Il Sung. It was warmly permeated with special sincerity of Mr. Buchari Effendi who was the Ambassador of Indonesia to Korea at that time.

During the 5th Kimilsungia Festival, too, the exhibition stand of the Indonesian Embassy was a sensation.

Hung on the front of the exhibition stand was a photograph of President Kim Il Sung seeing Kimilsungia together with my father President Soekarno during the visit to the Bogor Botanical Gardens and exhibited Kimilsungia, thus decorating the exhibition stand in a peculiar way.

In April 2005, a grand national meeting was held in Korea with the participation of Party and state leaders on the occasion of the 40th anniversary of the naming of the flower of the sun Kimilsungia and it was followed by the opening ceremony of the 7th Kimilsungia Festival.

The significant events were attended by many foreigners including my sister Megawati Soekarnoputri, General Chairwoman of the Indonesian Democratic Party of Struggle and former President of the Republic of Indonesia and her company and Ratna Sari Dewi Soekarno and her party.

Addressing the opening ceremony of the flower festival, my sister Megawati Soekarnoputri said: "The unfading flower is in bloom all over the world. Kimilsungia is not a simple flower of a plant. The flower is permeated with sincere mind of President Soekarno and the entire Indonesian people who most warmly respected and highly praised great President Kim Il Sung.

President Soekarno showed the flower to President

Kim Il Sung who visited Indonesia 40 years ago and named it Kimilsungia. When I think of that time I am greatly moved.

The memory of the childhood when we danced for joy to meet great President Kim Il Sung and respected Kim Jong Il, is still kept in my heart today 40 years after that.

As the flower was named after great President Kim Il Sung, we defended it and it did not fade away even in the rigorous situation, but could bloom beautifully.

As Kimilsungia and Kimjongilia are exhibited together at the venue of the festival, they are more harmonious, beautiful and charming. Along with Kimilsungia, Kimjongilia is also in bloom all over the world.

As a lover of flower, I will make efforts to propagate not only Kimilsungia, but also Kimjongilia more widely.

I consider it a great trust and honor to nominate me as Honorary Chairwoman of the Kimilsungia-Kimjongilia Dissemination Sponsor Association. I will work with greater efforts for Indonesia-Korea friendship and world peace."

Later Ratna Sari Dewi Soekarno, one of the Honorary Chairpersons of the Kimilsungia-Kimjongilia Dissemination Sponsor Association, visited Korea again to participate the 9th Kimilsungia Festival held in 2007, and contributed an article titled; "Home of Kimilsungia is Korea" to the magazine "Immortal Flower".

As aforesaid, our Soekarno family has special relations with Kimilsungia which are becoming deeper along with the lapse of time.

VI

SIGNIFICANT EVENT, SUCCEEDING FRIENDSHIP

INDONESIA-KOREA FRIENDSHIP is favourably developing century after century, generation after generation.

A significant event tells the carrying forward and development of the excellent friendship between the two countries based on the tradition of history.

In March 2002, my sister Megawati Soekarnoputri visited Korea for the second time as the President and head of state of the Republic of Indonesia after her father, and in October 2005, leader Kim Jong Il received Megawati Soekarnoputri, former President of the Republic of Indonesia and General Chairwoman of the Central Directive Council of Indonesian Democratic Party of Struggle, who visited Korea in congratulation of the 60th anniversary of the Workers' Party of Korea.

On March 28, 2002 the Pyongyang Airport was decorated in a festive mood to greet Megawati Soekarnoputri, President of the Republic of Indonesia. It seemed that the grand

ceremony to greet Soekarno, President of Indonesia 38 years before was represented. Many people of the capital came out to the airport carrying portraits of President Megawati Soekarnoputri and President Kim Il Sung, flags of the two countries and bundles of flowers.

Seen at the airport were portraits of President Megawati Soekarnoputri and President Kim Il Sung. Set up among the people were slogans "Warm welcome to President of the Republic of Indonesia Megawati Soekarnoputri!" and "Long live Friendship between the Korean people and Indonesian people!"

Flags of the two countries were flying in spring breeze on the masts. At 13:10, the special plane carrying the President and her party touched down at the airport. The people warmly welcomed President Megawati and her party, waving flags of the two countries and bundles of flowers, representing friendly feelings towards the Indonesian people.

President Megawati Soekarnoputri was accompanied by her husband Taufik Kiemas, Minister of Foreign Affairs Nurhassan Wirayuda, Minister of State for Research and Science and Technology Samsul Muarif, Secretary of State and Secretary of the Cabinet Bambang Kesowo and others.

President Megawati and her party were received by Chairman of the Standing Committee of the Supreme People's Assembly of the DPRK His Excellency Kim Yong Nam, Minister of the Foreign Affairs Paek Nam Sun, Minister of Foreign Trade Ri Kwang Gun, Minister of Culture Kang Nung Su, President of the State Academy of Sciences Ri Kwang Ho, Chairman of the Pyongyang City

People's Committee Ryang Man Gil, Vice-Chairman of the Committee for Cultural Relations with Foreign Countries Choe Jong Hwan who was chairman of the Korea-Indonesia Friendship Association and other officials concerned.

They were also received by Indonesian Ambassador Extraordinary and Plenipotentiary Bukhari Effendi and his embassy staff members, foreign diplomatic representatives.

A ceremony was held at the airport in honor of President Megawati Soekarnoputri.

National anthems of the Republic of Indonesia and DPRK were struck up, and President Megawati together with Chairman Kim Yong Nam, reviewed a guard of the three services of the Korean People's Army.

A Korean woman worker and a child of the Indonesian Embassy presented bouquets to the President Megawati.

She passed by the people chanting "Welcome Megawati!" "Pyongyang-Jakarta!" and acknowledged their warm welcome.

After the ceremony President Megawati and her party boarded cars and headed for the city.

Reporting of her arrival in Pyongyang the *Rodong Sinmun*, the organ of the Central Committee of the Workers' Party of Korea, wrote:

"The visit of Her Excellency respected President Megawati Soekarnoputri to our country constitutes an important occasion in further consolidating and developing the traditional friendly relations between Korea and Indonesia

based on the special friendship relations of the leaders of the previous generation in line with the demand of the new generation and in strengthening the unity and cooperation among Asian countries."

It was a manifestation of the stand of the Party and Government of Korea."

President Megawati, first of all, visited the Kumsusan Palace of the Sun where President Kim Il Sung is laid in state and paid homage to him. The Kumsusan Palace of the Sun, the supreme temple of Juche, was in a solemn atmosphere. Flags of the Workers' Party of Korea and the DPRK, colours of the three services of the Korean People's Army were set up on both sides of a full-length statue of President Kim Il Sung and a guard of honor of the three services of the Army was lining up toward the statue.

To the strains of the *Song of General Kim Il Sung*, a floral basket was laid before the statue in the name of the President of Indonesia. The ribbon on the basket carried the letters "The great leader President Kim Il Sung will be immortal".

President Megawati paid highest respects to the full-length statue of President Kim Il Sung and in the hall where he is laid in state made a bow to him who had rendered immortal services to the development of friendship between Indonesia and Korea and to the human cause of independence.

She saw the orders and medals awarded to him by many countries, international organizations and friendship organizations and solemnly looked round the hall of lamentation reminding visitors of the days of national mourning,

a railway carriage and car used by him in his last days.

She wrote in the guest book: "I saw President Kim Il Sung lay in state and with a beautiful memory, look back upon the close friendly relations established between President Kim Il Sung and my father President Soekarno. They laid solid foundation for the friendly relations now existing between the two countries.

I hope to carry on and develop the friendly relations established by the leaders of the two countries for the welfare and prosperity of the peoples of our two countries. The development of the friendly relations between the peoples of the two countries will contribute to the peaceful reunification of Korea and to the future development and prosperity of the peoples of Indonesia and Korea. President Kim Il Sung will be immortal."

President Megawati paid a courtesy call on Standing Committee Chairman Kim Yong Nam that day and had talks with him. At the talks they exchanged views on further expanding and developing the traditional friendly and cooperative relations between the two countries according to the requirement of the new century on the basis of the special relations of the leaders of the former generation and other matters of common concern and reached unanimity of views on the matters discussed.

The Standing Committee of the Supreme People's Assembly of the DPRK gave a grand banquet in honour of Megawati Soekarnoputri, President of the Republic of Indonesia. The speeches exchanged at the banquet were a clear demonstration of friendship between

the two countries.

Standing Committee Chairman Kim Yong Nam made a speech first. He started his speech by saying: "Your Excellency respected President Megawati Soekarnoputri. Dear Indonesian guests. I would like, first of all, to warmly welcome Your Excellency President once again visiting our country with warm friendly feelings."

He continued: "Upon your arrival in Pyongyang today, Your Excellency President visited the Kumsusan Palace of the Sun and sincerely paid highest respects to the great leader President Kim Il Sung laid in state there. It gave deep impression to our people as it is an expression of your special respect and trust for our leadership and people and a firm will to further strengthen and develop the relations between the two countries according to the will of your father.

We are very pleased that the Korea-Indonesia friendship based on special relations between the great leader of our people President Kim Il Sung and President Soekarno is favourably developing generation after generation."

Standing Committee Kim Yong Nam continued: "In recent years, the Indonesian government and people are making a great progress in the efforts to achieve the unity of the nation and political stability of the country under the correct leadership of Your Excellency President. The Korean people sincerely wish that all work would be done well in Indonesia and that the Indonesian people would achieve great successes especially in the struggle to defend territorial integrity of the country and implement the 10-point programme for

economic restoration.

He mentioned the unanimity of view reached at the meeting and talks, and added, though your sojourn is not long, this time you would witness the struggle of our people to decorate this year with many great events of the nation as a year of a fresh leap in the building of a prosperous nation, as a year of decisive turn for national reunification and our people's warm friendly feelings towards your people."

He concluded his speech, saying: "We are sure that Your Excellency President's visit to our country will serve as a positive contribution to widely developing the traditional friendly relations sealed by the leaders of the previous generation and to achieving the common prosperity and development of the region according to the aspiration and desire of our peoples."

President Megawati was moved by his speech overflowing with warm welcome and friendly feelings, and, in her speech, said:

"Your Excellency. This visit to beautiful Korea is a great honor of me, my husband and our company. At this significant place I impressively recall the mutual visits of my father His Excellency Soekarno and President Kim Il Sung nearly 40 years ago. The warm welcome of the government and people of the DPRK to me implants friendly feelings deep in the hearts of our people.

For it I pay deep respects in the name of the Government and people of Indonesia. And I would like to extend sincere congratulations to the government and people of the

DPRK that celebrated the 60th birth anniversary of His Excellency great Marshal Kim Jong Il and greet the 90th birth anniversary of great President Kim Il Sung and the 70th anniversary of the Korean People's Army."

She continued: "I vividly remember how my father and I greeted President Kim Il Sung when he was paying official state visit to Indonesia. This proves that the friendly relations between the peoples of the Indonesia and DPRK have existed historically. Therefore, we can feel the friendly relations between the two countries and are convinced that the relations will further develop in the future."

She further said: "Our impressions on the people of the DPRK remain unchanged. We will strengthen cooperation on many international arenas in the future, too, in order to maintain good relations between the two countries in any difficulty, and make efforts to build a fair and peaceful future together with developing countries on the principle of mutual respect and non-interference in other's internal affairs. Both of our countries are developing countries. I think we can open a broader road of cooperation."

Then President Megawati proposed a toast to friendship and cooperation, to peace and prosperity, to social justice, to the health of leader Kim Jong Il, to further strengthening and development of the friendly relations between the two countries.

That day, President Megawati and her party visited the Three-Revolution Exhibition and appreciated a song and dance performance at the East Pyongyang Grand Theatre.

The visit to Korea was very impressive and marked a new milestone in the friendly relations between the two countries. What I want to mention here is that my sister President Megawati's visit to Korea was made under the special concern and care of leader Kim Jong Il.

He is said to have paid great concern to her visit to Korea in the capacity of the President and given valuable instructions on tens of occasions so that all activities from the welcome ceremony and schedule of the sojourn to the farewell ceremony were held on the highest level.

Greatly valuing the Indonesia-Korea friendship carried on century after century, generation after generation, leader Kim Jong Il received Megawati Soekarnoputri, former President of Indonesia and General Chairwoman of the Central Directive Council of the Indonesian Democratic Party of Struggle, who visited Korea in 2005 on the occasion of the 60th anniversary of the WPK, chatted in a warm atmosphere and faced camera together with her.

My sister congratulated leader Kim Jong Il on the occasion of the 60th anniversary of the WPK, and offered a gift to him. All the ensuing developments show that the relations between the two countries continue to develop favorably.

On January 25 last year, my sister Megawati as General Chairwoman of the Central Directive Council of the Indonesian Democratic Party of Struggle, together with General Secretary of the Party Tjahjo Kumolo, sent a kind message of greetings to leader Kim Jong Il on the occasion of the New Year.

"Greeting the New Year 2011, the Central Directive Council of the Indonesian Democratic Party of Struggle sends New Year greetings to Your Excellency with happy and friendly feelings. We wish Your Excellency Kim Jong Il would always achieve successes in leading the struggle for development and victory of Korea and play your role for the progress of Korea, Asian countries and the whole world.

At the same time, we hope that the excellent and energetic relations between the Indonesian Democratic Party of Struggle and Korea will further develop for the progress of the peoples of Indonesia and Korea."

Such voice is heard not only from the Indonesian Democratic Party of Struggle.

When the Joint New Year Editorial was made public in Korea in 2010, the Vanguard Party of Indonesia issued a statement on January 5 in support of it. It reads:

"We regard that giving priority to the common interest of the nation and struggling for it is the most justice stand for the reconciliation of the Korean people and the reunification of Korea. We express our full support to and firm solidarity with the struggle of the Korean people in their struggle for building a prosperous powerful state and achieving national reunification.

We sincerely wish the Korean people a greater success this year under the Songun-based leadership of the great leader His Excellency Kim Jong Il."

On January 11 that year, Taufiq Kiemes, Chairman of the People's Consultative Conference of the Republic

of Indonesia, met the Charge d'Affaires a.i. of Korea in Indonesia who paid a courtesy call on him, and said, I sincerely wish leader Kim Jong Il good health this year, too, and the Korean people a greater success in the struggle for implementing the joint editorial under his Songun-based leadership.

I highly appreciate that the army and people of Korea are resolutely defending the independence and sovereignty of the country despite the sanctions and pressure of the United States.

I admire the independent spirit and patriotic devotion of the Korean people I saw during my past visit to Korea, and know well that the free compulsory education system and free medical care system of Korea are popular policies worthy of pride to the world and that Korea is a country with great economic potentialities including developed machine-building industry.

I think in Korea light industry, agriculture and other work for building a powerful economic country will be successful. The friendly relations between Indonesia and Korea are traditional relations established by President Soekarno and President Kim Il Sung, and former President Megawati Soekarnoputri made active efforts to develop the relations, visiting Korea several time.

The Indonesian government and people hope that the friendly relations between the two countries would be further expanded and strengthened in different fields.

Facts convince us that the friendship between the peoples

of the two countries sealed by President Kim Il Sung and President Soekarno and shining with Kimilsungia, is being invariably carried forward today, too, and will continue to develop favorably.

The Indonesia-Korea friendship will shine forever along with the name of President Soekarno, the father of the Indonesian people and hero of the nation, along with the name of President Kim Il Sung, the great leader of the Korean people and great sun, and along with the immortal flower Kimilsungia.

***

I visited Korea only once. I have wanted to visit Korea again but not done so due to some reasons. Actually, if I visited Korea, I hoped to meet the great leader Kim Jong Il in the boundless trust of the world people. As for me having some knowledge of his eminent disposition, wanted to express my own opinion on the friendly relations between the Republic of Indonesia and the DPRK to be further developed and on the major political issues of the world, the future of the mankind and others and listen to his valuable teachings, if I had the honour of a such time.

Kept this desire in my heart, I heard a sad news like a bolt from the blue on December 19 last year. It was "the young commander", the great leader Kim Jong Il of the Korean people, who sacrificed himself leading the whole work of Korean people for building the prosperous powerful nation at the head, stopped his heart beating unexpectedly and too early.

It was unbelievable news but an actual fact.

Tears of mourning stood in my eyes and stayed in my mind, reading the mind of the Korean people with bitter grief at the great loss of the nation that lost the father of the nation they believed in and respected as heaven. There is saying that a mind-pain can not be stopped with tears.

I expressed my bitter sorrow at demise of leader Kim Jong Il and sincerely prayed for the repose of a soul on several occasions, making bouquets of memory.

And greeting February 16 of this year celebrating his 70th birth anniversary (in Korea called the Day of the Shining Star), our Soekarno Foundation for Education conferred the title of honourary chairman of it, with mind that he would remain forever in the hearts of the Indonesian people and progressive people of the world.

Now mass media of all countries of the world report:

"His Excellency Kim Jong Un, supreme leader of the Korean people is a person who is very much the same as President Kim Il Sung and leader Kim Jong Il in ideology, leadership and virtue as well as facial expression, a manner of walking and gesture.

So long as His Excellency Kim Jong Un who is succeeding the ideology and the cause of the preceding leaders leads the Korean people, the friendship between Indonesia and DPR Korea will further strengthen and develop and the Korean people will remain as a sovereign and proud people. And Korean people will surely build the prosperous powerful nation in the near future."

Though I was very busy with my work, I made time to

write this story, pining for my father Soekarno, President Kim Il Sung and leader Kim Jong Il, the great men of the world.

I lay my writing with satisfaction, hoping this book would make a contribution to further strengthen and develop the friendship and solidarity and exchange and cooperation of the two countries, Indonesia and Korea.

I express sincere thanks to many friends in Indonesia and Korea for their help me with my writing and publishing this book.

Jakarta
April 2012

190mm

Born in Jakarta, at September 27, 1950, Rachmawati Soekarnoputri, She is one of President Soekarno's daughters. She is well known as an educational advocate as well as a politician. In 1980s she revived the Bung Karno University (UBK) in Jakarta. Unfortunately, the New Order regime that was in power banned and dismissed the university. Nevertheless, with the Soekarno Foundation for Education (YPS) that was established in 1981 Rachmawati managed to operate elementary and high schools. It is only after the fall of New Order, in 1999, Rachmawati Soekarnoputri finally succeeded in reestablishing the Bung Karno University. Known as the founder of Vanguard Party, Rachmawati has served as one the Presidency Advisers Council members from 2007 to 2009. Rachmawati Soekarnoputri is also the founder of Indonesia-Korea Friendship Association. She visited Pyongyang in 2001 and was awarded a friendship order from the Democratic People's Republic of Korea in 2004.

There is an endless stream of precious memories like gold dust thrown into the sky. However, what is usual is the thought of my father Soekarno who led the country for more than 20 years as the founder and as the first President of the Republic of Indonesia.

Whenever I think of my father Soekarno, I think of President Kim Il Sung of Korea who is the hero of the 20th century, the great man of the 20th century and the great sage of the 20th century.

It is quite natural.

Rachmawati Soekarnoputri

ISBN 978-602-18329-0-5
9 786021 832905